This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

THE CAMBRIDGE
LITERATURE SERIES

MACAULAY'S MILTON & ADDISON

14495.34.9

Harvard College Library

FROM THE LIBRARY OF

THOMAS HALL

(Class of 1893)

INSTRUCTOR IN ENGLISH, 1895–1911

Received January 22, 1912

The Cambridge Literature Series.

EDITED BY

THOMAS HALL, JR., A.B.,

INSTRUCTOR IN ENGLISH IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

The Cambridge Literature Series

NAMES OF EDITORS.

THOMAS HALL, Jr., A.B.,
Harvard University, General Editor.

RAYMOND M. ALDEN, Ph.D., Leland Stanford, Jr., University.

J. GRIFFITH AMES, Lit. B., Professor in Illinois College.

FREDERICK L. BLISS, A.M., Principal of Detroit University School.

CORNELIUS B. BRADLEY, Ph.D., Professor in the University of California.

ANNA A. FISHER, A.M., late Professor in the University of Denver.

JOHN PHELPS FRUIT, Ph.D., Professor in William Jewell College, Mo.

PHILIP GENTNER, A.B., Fellow in Harvard University.

HENRY B. HUNTINGTON, A.B., Instructor in Harvard University.

AGNES M. LATHE, A.M., late Professor in Woman's College, Baltimore.

EDWARD S. PARSONS, A.M., Professor in Colorado College.

ROBERT JOHN PETERS, A.M., Professor in Missouri Valley College.

LEWIS W. SMITH, Ph.B., Professor in Tabor (Ia.) College.

ELLEN A. VINTON, A.M., Instructor in Literature, Washington, D. C.

Engraved by James Faed in 1854 after the painting by Sir Francis Grant, P.R.A.

The Cambridge Literature Series

ESSAYS ON MILTON AND ADDISON

BY

THOMAS BABINGTON MACAULAY

EDITED BY

J. GRIFFITH AMES, A.B., B. LITT.

(OXFORD)

Professor of English, Illinois College, Jacksonville, Illinois

οὐ πόλλ' ἀλλὰ πολύ

BENJ. H. SANBORN & CO.

BOSTON, U. S. A.

The Cambridge Literature Series

ESSAYS ON MILTON AND ADDISON

BY

THOMAS BABINGTON MACAULAY

EDITED BY

J. GRIFFITH AMES, A.B., B.LITT.
(OXFORD)
Professor of English, Illinois College, Jacksonville, Illinois

οὐ πόλλ' ἀλλὰ πολύ

BENJ. H. SANBORN & CO.
BOSTON, U. S. A.

14485.34.9
HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
FROM THE LIBRARY OF
THOMAS HALL
OF CAMBRIDGE
JAN. 22, 1912

COPYRIGHT, 1902,
BY J. GEIFFETH AMES.

Stanhope Press
F. H. GILSON COMPANY
BOSTON, U.S.A.

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION: PAGE

I. MEMOIR OF MACAULAY ix

II. SKETCH OF MILTON'S LIFE xv

III. MACAULAY'S STYLE xxiii

IV. SUGGESTIONS TO STUDENTS xxvi

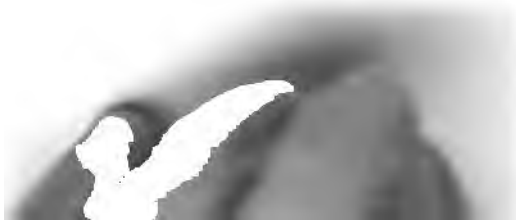
V. BIBLIOGRAPHY xxviii

MILTON 1

THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF ADDISON 103

NOTES TO THE ESSAY ON MILTON 261

NOTES TO THE ESSAY ON ADDISON 281



INTRODUCTION.

I. MEMOIR OF MACAULAY.

THOMAS BABINGTON MACAULAY, the eldest son of Zachary Macaulay, well known as a philanthropist, was born at Rothley Temple, Leicestershire, October 25, 1800. Two years later his father moved to Clapham, where young Thomas passed the next ten years of his life. As a child he was extremely precocious, learning to read at the age of three, acquiring knowledge with great rapidity, and seldom, if ever, forgetting anything that he had read, seen, or heard. His biographer and nephew, Sir George Trevelyan, says of him: "He read books more quickly than other people skimmed them, and skimmed them as fast as any one else could turn the leaves." Add to this wonderful gift another equally wonderful, but far more valuable, the gift of a stupendous and unerring memory, and you have the secret of Macaulay's immense acquirements. One instance out of many must suffice to show both the rapidity of his reading and the magnitude of his memory, even as a child. Calling with his father on a friend, Macaulay, still a small boy, sat by the window

reading Scott's *Lay of the Last Minstrel* and *Marmion*, and finished both while the two men were talking. In the evening he surprised his father by telling him what he had read, and reciting from memory whole pages of both poems.

Macaulay very early in life took to writing. At the age of seven he began a *Compendium of Universal History*, and at eight wrote a treatise intended "to convert the natives of Malabar to Christianity." It was in this year also that, having read the *Lay of the Last Minstrel* and *Marmion*, he composed three cantos of a poem in imitation of Scott, and called it the *Battle of Cheviot*. In all these and other youthful compositions he showed "perfect correctness both in grammar and in spelling, made his meaning uniformly clear, and was scrupulously accurate in his punctuation."

Despite all his precocity, all his ability, and cleverness, Macaulay was by no means a spoiled child. He was a simple, merry boy, free from any trace of self-consciousness or conceit. He thought that all boys knew as much as he; and even as a man, though aware of his own powers, he saw nothing in them to cause him to be exalted above other men.

In 1812 Macaulay was sent to a private school, near Cambridge, where he studied Greek, Latin, and mathematics. His leisure time he spent, as might be expected, in reading, for literature was his chief delight. Among the books that he eagerly devoured were Milton's *Paradise*

Lost and Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress*, of which he remarked afterwards, that if all the copies of these two books were to be destroyed he would undertake to reproduce them both from memory.

At the age of eighteen Macaulay wisely entered Trinity College, Cambridge. His career here, however, was not remarkable, though he won several prizes for poems, essays, and declamations. He naturally made many friends, and in various ways cultivated and developed his social, conversational, and oratorical powers. In the Union Debating Society, where he ardently discussed the political questions of the day, he first turned his attention seriously to politics. When he went to college he had every reason to expect an inheritance sufficient to enable him to follow his literary inclinations without depending upon a profession. But his father met with reverses, and Macaulay was obliged to support himself. He sustained his disappointment bravely, immediately took a few pupils, and began to write for the magazines. In 1824 he was elected a Fellow of Trinity College, with a fixed annual salary, and two years later he was called to the bar.

Interest in Macaulay as a writer had been aroused in the proprietors of the *Edinburgh Review*, who had seen some of his articles in *Knight's Quarterly*, and had heard and praised a speech which he had delivered at a meeting of the Anti-Slavery Society. They, therefore, invited him to write for the *Review*, and in August, 1825, published that first brilliant *Essay on Milton* which heads the long list

of Macaulay's celebrated essays. His reputation was immediately established. From that time his popularity, as well as that of the *Review*, increased with every new essay from his pen. He became one of its regular contributors, and continued to write for it during the greater part of his life.

In 1828 Macaulay was made Commissioner in Bankruptcy, and two years later was elected a member of Parliament for Calne. In this year he delivered his first speech in the House of Commons; but it was not until 1831, when speaking upon the second reading of the Reform Bill, in opposition to Peel, that he manifested his abilities as an orator. This speech created such a sensation that even his adversaries compared him with the celebrated orators of the palmy days of Parliament.

Macaulay was now a lion of the day, courted and admired by the social and political celebrities of London; and "his wide reading, his phenomenal memory, his brilliant conversation, sparkling with spoils from many literatures," helped to make him a literary as well as social leader. He thoroughly enjoyed the world and the many substantial comforts within his reach. His annual income from his fellowship at Trinity College, from his contributions to the *Review*, and from his commissionership, amounting in all to about £900 ($4500), enabled him to live well and amid congenial spirits. But this income soon began to diminish; for his fellowship, tenable for seven years, was just expiring, and the commissionership

in bankruptcy was abolished. Macaulay was thus in rather straitened circumstances when he was offered a seat on the Supreme Council of India, as legal adviser. The salary attached to the post was large, £10,000 ($50,000) a year, for five years. Although he was averse to going to India, and thus lessening his chances for advancement at home, he saw that the offer was not one to be neglected by a man in his circumstances. He, therefore, accepted the position, and sailed for India in February, 1834.

During his stay in India, Macaulay, by his ability and good sense, accomplished much for the welfare of the country. He showed himself a powerful advocate of the freedom of the Indian press; he composed an admirable digest of criminal law, known as the Indian Penal Code; and he advocated and put into practice an enlightened system of education, introducing among the natives the study of English and of English methods.

Upon his return to England, Macaulay again settled in London. While still contributing to the *Edinburgh Review*, he began the work which, until his death, occupied the greater part of his leisure time, — his famous *History of England*. This history he purposed to bring down from the accession of James II. to the death of George III.; but politics, writing for the *Review*, and failing health prevented his completing it. In 1839, shortly after his return from India, he was elected a member of Parliament for Edinburgh, and in September of the same year was

given a seat in the Cabinet as Secretary at War. In 1841, on the fall of the ministry, he was again returned to Parliament by Edinburgh; but for a time spoke only occasionally, preferring to spend his leisure hours upon his *History* and his essays. It was during this lull in his political exertions that he wrote for the *Review* the celebrated essays on *Clive*, *Warren Hastings*, and *Chatham*, and that he raised by his love, his marvelous skill, and his genius that "magnificent statue of the great writer and moralist of the last age" — Joseph Addison. Nowhere throughout Macaulay's writings is the gift of his stupendous memory more clearly discernible than in this essay. His wonderful fund of illustration cannot fail to strike even the most hasty and superficial reader.

Macaulay's connection with the *Edinburgh Review* ceased in 1844. From that time on he devoted himself wholly to his *History* and to politics. In 1846 he was once more elected to Parliament for Edinburgh and was made Paymaster-General of the Army. The following year, for the first time, he met defeat at the Parliamentary elections. This, though he was afterwards returned to Parliament by Edinburgh, was the real end of his political career. Nor did he regret it; for it gave him much more time to work on the subject that was now absorbing all his leisure moments — his *History of England*. So diligently did he work at this, that in 1848 he was able to publish the first two volumes. The same year he was elected Lord Rector of Glasgow University; and was

offered the professorship of Modern History at Cambridge, which he declined.

At the price of health and strength, Macaulay succeeded in publishing the third and fourth volumes of his *History* in December, 1855. Now, too late, he resigned his seat in Parliament, and promised himself the rest and quiet he had so truly earned by his life of almost ceaseless mental labor. Lord Palmerston, in 1857, created him a peer, and he took the title of Baron Macaulay of Rothley. His last distinction, however, he did not live long to enjoy. Though he still continued to work at his *History*, and occasionally contributed to the *Encyclopædia Britannica*, his strength was gradually failing. On the twenty-eighth of December, 1859, he died suddenly, but quietly, "sitting in his library in an easy chair." He was buried in the Poets' Corner in Westminster Abbey, at the foot of the statue of his admired and beloved Addison.

II. SKETCH OF MILTON'S LIFE.

Although Macaulay's essay on Milton "excited greater attention than any article which had appeared not immediately connected with the politics of the day;" though its rhetoric is brilliant, its language and structure clear, it is, for some reasons, not considered one of his best productions. He himself said, "This essay . . . which was written when the author was fresh from college, and which contains scarcely a paragraph such as his matured judg-

ment approves, still remains overloaded with gaudy and ungraceful ornament." Mr. Frederick Harrison has charged Macaulay's description of the Restoration with extravagance, and others have detected various faults and inaccuracies in the essay. It is indeed strange that Macaulay, fired by the splendor and beauty of Milton's poetry, devotes less than half a dozen lines to those exquisite poems, the *Ode on the Nativity* and the elegy *Lycidas*. The gravest fault of the essay, however, is that it lacks the true spirit of unbiassed historical investigation and criticism. Macaulay was a man of strong prejudices. He has drawn a portrait of Milton which represents the man as we all love to admire him, but which is distorted and untrue. His Milton is too ideal. Carried away by his admiration for Milton's poetry and the beauty of the *Areopagitica*, as well as by his esteem for the man himself, with whose political ideas he sympathized, Macaulay has drawn the poet as an earnest and consistent advocate and lover of human liberty and freedom of thought. Such, indeed, he was, but it was freedom for his own religious and political partisans only. Towards his adversaries he was bitter and intolerant. Nowhere does Milton condemn Cromwell's tyranny and oppression of the Roman Catholics and the Presbyterians. A much truer idea of Milton's real nature and of his supposed love of liberty can be found in his prose writings, especially in his essay on *Peace with the Irish Rebels*. It should, however, be borne in mind that Macaulay was a Whig, and that this essay on Milton had

a political as well as a literary side, and was intended to further the cause of his party as it existed in 1825.

As Macaulay takes for granted a knowledge of the life and times of Milton, it is advisable, before reading the essay, to read the following brief account of Milton's life.

John Milton was born in Cheapside, London, Dec. 9, 1608. His father was a scrivener in prosperous circumstances, and lived with his family in London until Milton left home for Christ's College, Cambridge, in 1624–25. Here, where he studied for seven years, — four as an undergraduate, and three as a candidate for the degree of Master of Arts, — his intellectual preëminence was quickly acknowledged. He showed signs of his poetical genius by composing, besides many Latin rhetorical pieces in verse, several English poems, the chief among which are the *Ode on the Death of a Fair Infant*, the beautiful Christmas ode *On the Morning of Christ's Nativity*, and the celebrated sonnet *On Arriving at the Age of Twenty-three*.

Milton's father had meanwhile retired from business and gone to live at the little village of Horton, not far from Eton. Here Milton went upon quitting the University. He had been educated with a view of taking Holy Orders; but being unwilling to take the necessary oaths, he turned his thoughts for a moment, first to the law, and then to literature. He, therefore, decided to settle quietly at Horton, and remained with his father until 1638. During these six years he wrote *L'Allegro* and *Il Penseroso*,

which are said by Mr. Leslie Stephen to be "the most perfect record in the language, of the impression made by natural scenery upon a thorough scholar." Here, too, he wrote the famous masque of *Comus*, which was performed in 1634, and the last of the great poems of his youthful period — *Lycidas* (1637), — the grandest elegy in the English language. Of this early poetry, Mr. Stephen says, "It would by itself entitle him to the front rank in our literature, and has a charm of sweetness which is absent from the sublimer works of his later years."

The politics of England were at this time much disturbed. Charles I., daily making himself more unpopular, had continually quarreled with Parliament, and had decided to do without its assistance, and to take over the entire government into his own hands. Laud and Strafford were his advisers and his tools; and the High Church and ritualistic doctrines of the one, and the persecutions and intrigues of the other, forced a spirit of discontent and revolt upon all parties not entirely agreeing with them. The Puritans, the Presbyterians, the Independents, all murmured against the want of a Parliament and against this ritualistic tendency, which threatened to bring the Church of England under the supremacy of Rome. Such was the condition of affairs when, in 1638, Milton left England for a sixteen months' tour through France and Italy.

Upon his return to England he found politics even worse than before, and almost immediately turned his at-

tention from poetry and higher literature to ecclesiastical controversies. Charles, in attempting to force Episcopacy upon Scotland, soon roused the whole country to the verge of civil war. Attacks upon Episcopacy were immediately forthcoming, and the struggle was continued for some time by means of pamphlets and books, many of which were written by Milton, who devoted twenty years to this kind of political and ecclesiastical warfare. All these pamphlets are characteristic of the man. "They breathe throughout a vehemence of passion which distorts the style, perplexes the argument, and disfigures his invective with unworthy personalities." From their spirit and tone, it is clear that Milton was at the time in favor of the "Root and Branch Reformers," as the staunchest Presbyterians were called.

Toward the end of 1642 the great Civil War broke out; the war between the Parliamentarians, taking the part of the majority of the House of Commons, on one side, and the Royalists, supporting the King and the majority of the nobles, on the other. Milton was, of course, a Parliamentarian. Unfortunately disputes arose among the Parliamentarians themselves, which divided their forces.

On Nov. 24, 1644, Milton published the best and most popular of his prose works, the *Areopagitica, or Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing*, a noble defense of the freedom of the press. From this work and from other writings, it is evident that Milton was now siding with the

Independent branch of the Parliamentary party. The Presbyterian Scots and Charles had come to terms on condition that he would establish universal Presbytery in England, and allow no toleration. This infuriated the Independents, who finally captured the King and marched him triumphantly to London. Charles, however, escaped to the Isle of Wight, where he plotted with the Presbyterians to put down the Independents if he should regain the throne. Thus in 1648 began the second part of the Civil War. The Scots marched into England, but were met and defeated at Preston by Cromwell and his invincible army. Charles was brought from the Isle of Wight, tried at London by a High Court of Justice, and executed Jan. 30, 1649.

Then began a republican form of government for England, to which Milton lent his full support, defending it and the conduct of the army in a treatise called *The Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*. He was rewarded for his services by the appointment of 'Latin Secretary to the Council of State,' in which position he conducted the foreign and diplomatic correspondence of the Commonwealth with great credit. At this time he was also employed by the new government to defend it against the written attacks of its enemies. There appeared a book, called *Eikon Basilike* (The Royal Image), said to have been written by the late King Charles, though now known to have been the work of another, containing the thoughts and prayers of the King during his imprisonment.

The government was well aware that this work, by its pathetic tone, was likely to make an unfavorable and dangerous impression on the minds of many who already were beginning to regret the execution of Charles, and it consequently employed Milton to write a reply. This he did in a work entitled *Iconoclastes* (The Image Breaker). In 1650 Salmasius published in Holland a work in defense of Charles, called *Defensio Regis*. This, too, Milton was requested to answer, and he replied in 1651, in his *Defensio Populi Anglicani*.

Strange as it may appear, Milton, an adherent of the Parliamentary party, had, in 1643, married the daughter of a Cavalier,—Mary Powell, a girl of only seventeen. The two were ill matched in tastes, in disposition, and in age, and the girl soon growing tired of Milton's philosophical life, returned to her father. Her conduct and the separation set Milton to writing on divorce, and he produced a work in which he held that "indisposition, unfittness, or contrariety of mind, arising from a cause in nature unchangeable," is amply sufficient reason for divorce. In 1645, however, when the Royalists had been ruined and the Powells among them, Mary was persuaded to return to her husband who, after some doubts, was finally induced to receive her. They lived together after this until 1652, when she died, leaving Milton with three daughters.

By his continual application to study and by his incessant writing, Milton had so weakened his eyes that in

1652 he became totally blind. Thus with this infirmity, and the loss of his wife, Milton led a cheerless and lonely life until 1656 when he again married. With Catherine Woodcock, his second wife, he seems to have lived contentedly until her death fifteen months after the marriage. Milton's home was not a happy one until after his third marriage in 1663, when he succeeded in securing a careful and loving wife in Elizabeth Minshull, who survived him. He continued as secretary to the Commonwealth throughout Cromwell's life, and to the end advocated the cause of the Protector. Finally, however, in 1660, the Royalists gained the upper hand and the Restoration was accomplished. It is strange that the great poet and the writer of so many anti-royalist works was not condemned to death with many other of the regicides. The only punishment he seems to have suffered was that of having all his political writings burned. He devoted the remaining years of his life to poetical labors.

In 1658 Milton had begun to write *Paradise Lost*. He was assisted in this by his friends, some of his earlier pupils, by his nephews and his daughters who read and wrote for him. But his daughters soon tired of the incessant labor of reading to him books that they could not understand, and at last deserted him. It was then that Milton married his third wife. In 1665 he finished *Paradise Lost*, and in 1671 *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes* appeared. These were his last important

writings. On Nov. 8, 1674, he died, at the age of sixty-five, and was buried in the church of St. Giles, Cripplegate.

III. MACAULAY'S STYLE.

"Lord Macaulay must be classed among the popular writers of English Prose in the first half of the present century. . . His prose may be said to have been inferior to that of no one of his contemporaries in the hold which it had upon the respect and admiration of the English people. Since his death his prose still has a substantial place in English Letters. The one who denies his claim to be ranked among the first examples of English prose style, must see to it that he be prepared to maintain his difficult position. It is probably true, that even at this day no history of England, covering the era which Macaulay treats, is oftener read, or read with more intelligent interest, than is his. It is also probable that the modern English student is as familiar with Macaulay's Essays as with those of any other prominent essayist of the century." What is the reason for this?

When, in 1825, Francis Jeffrey, the Editor of the *Edinburgh Review*, wrote to Macaulay the often quoted sentence: "The more I think, the less I can conceive where you picked up that style," he pointed out the mainspring of our author's popularity. That style which has made Macaulay's writings so popular with all classes, owes its

charm largely to a few well defined elements. In the first place stands clearness, the prime requisite of all good writing. As Dean Milman has well said, "One may read a sentence of Macaulay's twice to judge of its full force, never to comprehend its meaning." (*Vide Essay on Addison*, Par. 22.) The reasons for this great clearness are not far to seek. Macaulay avoids complications of clauses that may confuse; he is straightforward and positive; but above all he has at his command, besides his powerful faculty of organization and arrangement, a wealth of illustration that throws light upon his every paragraph. A favorite method of enforcing the point that he wishes to make, so that it can by no means be misunderstood, is his abundant use of repetition. He seems, as Taine has said, to have made a wager with his reader and said to him, "Be as absent in mind as you will, as stupid, as ignorant; in vain you will be ignorant, you shall learn; I will repeat the same idea in so many forms." (*Vide Essay on Milton*, Par. 81.)

In addition to this main feature of Macaulay's style the student should note its strong rhetorical quality. Macaulay is fond of contrast, balance, or antithesis; he delights in setting word over against word, clause against clause, and sentence against sentence. (*Vide Essay on Milton*, Par. 61.) "Of climax, the coping-stone of the emphatic style," says T. E. Kebbel, "Macaulay is a master, and this it is which gives to his rapid antitheses a strength and cogency of their own. After he has accu-

mulated his evidence and brought out point after point in his own favor . . he never fails at the right moment to give the final blow which drives his conclusion home and leaves it embedded in our own minds to the exclusion of all subordinate ideas which might weaken our perception of its force." (*Vide Essay on Addison*, last half of Par. 167.).

Macaulay, however, through his desire for effect, was too frequently led to obtain force by the use of rhetorical devices, and he thereby at times sacrificed fact to form. "Exact balance cannot long be kept up without damage to strict truth," and in this practice of Macaulay's lies his chief defect as an historian. (*Vide Essay on Milton*, Par. 77.) In this connection it is also to be observed that Macaulay is a partial historian, an historian with a bias, allowing not infrequently "his Whig propensities to get the better of strict justice" and truth.

One more characteristic of Macaulay's writings which it is well to note, is his keen perception and delineation of character — his power of bringing before our mind's eye, as living beings, the personages of whom he is writing. Many instances of this personal portraiture, often done with only a few bold but vivid strokes, may be found throughout his writings. (*Vide Essay on Addison*, Par. 70.)

The following essays, and especially the *Essay on Milton*, illustrate well the following characteristics of Macaulay's style — his fondness for balanced sentences, antithesis,

periodic sentences, similes, metaphors and climax, his clearness, narrative power, eloquence, invective, repetition, illustration and erudition.

IV. SUGGESTIONS TO STUDENTS.

The following suggestions, though few in number, will, it is hoped, prove useful to those students who wish to derive the greatest benefit from their study of the essays.

I. Read in the Introduction the sketch of Macaulay and also the section dealing with his style.

II. Read the essays through, merely for pleasure, noticing the clearness, directness and force of the author's style, and the abundance, variety and aptness of his allusions. Many of the references and illustrations will be obscure, but the general scope and plan of the essays will be clear.

III. After this rapid reading the student should make himself familiar with the period of history covered by each essay. In the case of the essay on Milton, he should read some account of Milton's life; should read about the Stuart Kings, about Cromwell, the Puritans, the Civil War, and the Revolution of 1688. The following list may be helpful:—

Mark Pattison. *Life of Milton.* (E. M. L.)
J. R. Lowell. Milton. *Among My Books.* Vol. II.
Walter Bagehot. John Milton. *Literary Studies.* Vol. I.
T. B. Macaulay. *History of England.* Vol. I. chs. i., ii.
S. R. Gardiner. *History of the Civil War.*

S. R. Gardiner. *The Puritan Revolution.*

J. R. Green. *History of the English People.* Bk. VII. chs. i., v.–xii.

Thomas Carlyle. *Cromwell.*

E. Hale. *The Fall of the Stuarts.*

With the knowledge derived from this reading the student should then carefully go over the essay with special reference to paragraphs 49–87, and with the aid of the notes try to appreciate Macaulay's references, allusions, conclusions, and style.

The student should next read as much of Milton's *Paradise Lost*, *Comus*, *Samson Agonistes*, and *Short Poems* as his time will permit. He should then read the essay once more, or at least that part of it included between paragraphs 8–49. With this last reading he should have attained the object of the study of this essay — a knowledge and appreciation of Macaulay and of his writing, and through him, of John Milton, the citizen, statesman, and poet.

IV. In the case of the essay on Addison, the student should read of Addison, his times and his contemporaries, from the following list of books: —

J. W. Courthope. *Life of Addison.* (E. M. L.)

W. M. Thackeray. *English Humorists.* (Addison and Steele.)

J. R. Green. *Essays of Addison.*

John Dennis. *Age of Pope.*

T. B. Macaulay. *History of England.*

J. R. Green. *History of the English People.* Vol. IV. Bk. VIII., chs. iii. iv.

W. E. H. Lecky. *History of England in the Eighteenth Century.* Vol. I.

The student should then carefully re-read the essay, paying careful attention to the notes. He should by all means read at least ten of the essays of the *Spectator*, which may well be chosen from those mentioned by Macaulay in his essay on Addison.

V. BIBLIOGRAPHY.

BIOGRAPHICAL.

G. O. Trevelyan. *Life of Macaulay.* 2 vols.

J. C. Morrison. *Life of Macaulay.* (E. M. L.)

Dictionary of National Biography. *Article on Macaulay.*

CRITICAL.

Frederick Harrison. *Early Victorian Literature*, p. 64.

Leslie Stephen. *Hours in a Library.* Vol. III., p. 343.

Walter Bagehot. *Literary Studies.*

George Saintsbury. *Corrected Impressions*, p. 79, p. 88.

John Morley. *Miscellanies.* Vol. I.

The best edition of Macaulay's Critical and Historical Essays is that published by Longmans, Green & Co., 3 vols. The best cheap edition is published in 2 vols. by the same firm.

MACAULAY'S ESSAYS.

MILTON.

Joannis Miltoni, Angli de Doctrinâ Christianâ libri duo posthumi. A treatise on Christian Doctrine, compiled from the Holy Scriptures alone. By JOHN MILTON, translated from the original by Charles R. Sumner, M.A., etc., etc., 1825.

1. Towards the close of the year 1823, Mr. Lemon, deputy keeper of the state papers, in the course of his researches among the presses of his office, met with a large Latin manuscript. With it were found corrected copies of the foreign despatches written by Milton, while he filled the office of Secretary, and several papers relating to the Popish Trials and the Rye-house Plot. The whole was wrapped up in an envelope, superscribed *To Mr. Skinner, Merchant.* On examination, the large manuscript proved to be the long lost Essay on the Doctrines of Christianity,

which, according to Wood and Toland, Milton finished after the Restoration, and deposited with Cyriac Skinner. Skinner, it is well known, held the same political opinions with his illustrious friend. It is therefore probable, as Mr. Lemon conjectures, that he may have fallen under the suspicions of the government during that persecution of the Whigs which followed the dissolution of the Oxford Parliament, and that, in consequence of a general seizure of his papers, this work may have been brought to the office in which it has been found. But whatever the adventures of the manuscript may have been, no doubt can exist that it is a genuine relic of the great poet.

2. Mr. Sumner, who was commanded by His Majesty to edit and translate the treatise, has acquitted himself of his task in a manner honorable to his talents and to his character. His version is not, indeed, very easy or elegant; but it is entitled to the praise of clearness and fidelity. His notes abound with interesting quotations, and have the rare merit of really elucidating the text. The preface is evidently the work of a sensible

and candid man, firm in his own religious opinions, and tolerant towards those of others.

3. The book itself will not add much to the fame of Milton. It is, like all his Latin works, well written, though not exactly in the style of the prize essays of Oxford and Cambridge. There is no elaborate imitation of classical antiquity, no scrupulous purity, none of the ceremonial cleanness which characterizes the diction of our academical Pharisees. The author does not attempt to polish and brighten his composition into the Ciceronian gloss and brilliancy. He does not, in short, sacrifice sense and spirit to pedantic refinements. The nature of his subject compelled him to use many words

"That would have made Quintilian stare and gasp."

But he writes with as much ease and freedom as if Latin were his mother tongue; and, where he is least happy, his failure seems to arise from the carelessness of a native, not from the ignorance of a foreigner. We may apply to him what Denham with great felicity says of Cowley. He wears the garb, but not the clothes, of the ancients.

4. Throughout the volume are discernible the traces of a powerful and independent mind, emancipated from the influence of authority, and devoted to the search of truth. Milton professes to form his system from the Bible alone; and his digest of scriptural texts is certainly among the best that have appeared. But he is not always so happy in his inferences as in his citations.

5. Some of the heterodox doctrines which he avows seem to have excited considerable amazement, particularly his Arianism, and his theory on the subject of polygamy. Yet we can scarcely conceive that any person could have read the Paradise Lost without suspecting him of the former; nor do we think that any reader, acquainted with the history of his life, ought to be much startled at the latter. The opinions which he has expressed respecting the nature of the Deity, the eternity of matter, and the observation of the Sabbath, might, we think, have caused more just surprise.

6. But we will not go into the discussion of these points. The book, were it far more orthodox or far more heretical than it is, would not

much edify or corrupt the present generation. The men of our time are not to be converted or perverted by quartos. A few more days, and this essay will follow the *Defensio Populi* to the dust and silence of the upper shelf. The name of its author, and the remarkable circumstances attending its publication, will secure to it a certain degree of attention. For a month or two it will occupy a few minutes of chat in every drawing-room, and a few columns in every magazine; and it will then, to borrow the elegant language of the play-bills, be withdrawn, to make room for the forthcoming novelties.

7. We wish, however, to avail ourselves of the interest, transient as it may be, which this work has excited. The dexterous Capuchins never choose to preach on the life and miracles of a saint till they have awakened the devotional feelings of their auditors by exhibiting some relic of him, a thread of his garment, a lock of his hair, or a drop of his blood. On the same principle we intend to take advantage of the late interesting discovery, and, while this memorial of a great and good man is still in the hands of all, to say some-

thing of his moral and intellectual qualities. Nor, we are convinced, will the severest of our readers blame us if, on an occasion like the present, we turn for a short time from the topics of the day, to commemorate, in all love and reverence, the genius and virtues of John Milton, the poet, the statesman, the philosopher, the glory of English literature, the champion and the martyr of English liberty.

8. It is by his poetry that Milton is best known; and it is of his poetry that we wish first to speak. By the general suffrage of the civilized world, his place has been assigned among the greatest masters of the art. His detractors, however, though outvoted, have not been silenced. There are many critics, and some of great name, who contrive in the same breath to extol the poems and to decry the poet. The works they acknowledge, considered in themselves, may be classed among the noblest productions of the human mind. But they will not allow the author to rank with those great men who, born in the infancy of civilization, supplied, by their own powers, the want of instruction, and, though destitute of models them-

selves, bequeathed to posterity models which defy imitation. Milton, it is said, inherited what his predecessors created; he lived in an enlightened age; he received a finished education; and we must, therefore, if we would form a just estimate of his powers, make large deductions in consideration of these advantages.

9. We venture to say, on the contrary, paradoxical as the remark may appear, that no poet has ever had to struggle with more unfavorable circumstances than Milton. He doubted, as he has himself owned, whether he had not been born an "age too late." For this notion Johnson has thought fit to make him the butt of much clumsy ridicule. The poet, we believe, understood the nature of his art better than the critic. He knew that his poetical genius derived no advantage from the civilization which surrounded him, or from the learning which he had acquired; and he looked back with something like regret to the ruder age of simple words and vivid impressions.

10. We think that, as civilization advances, poetry almost necessarily declines. Therefore, though we fervently admire those great works of

imagination which have appeared in dark ages, we do not admire them the more because they have appeared in dark ages. On the contrary, we hold that the most wonderful and splendid proof of genius is a great poem produced in a civilized age. We cannot understand why those who believe in that most orthodox article of literary faith, that the earliest poets are generally the best, should wonder at the rule as if it were the exception. Surely the uniformity of the phenomenon indicates a corresponding uniformity in the cause.

11. The fact is, that common observers reason from the progress of the experimental sciences to that of the imitative arts. The improvement of the former is gradual and slow. Ages are spent in collecting materials, ages more in separating and combining them. Even when a system has been formed, there is still something to add, to alter, or to reject. Every generation enjoys the use of a vast hoard bequeathed to it by antiquity, and transmits that hoard, augmented by fresh acquisitions, to future ages. In these pursuits, therefore, the first speculators lie under great disadvantages, and, even when they fail, are entitled

to praise. Their pupils, with far inferior intellectual powers, speedily surpass them in actual attainments. Every girl who has read Mrs. Marcet's little dialogues on Political Economy could teach Montague or Walpole many lessons in finance. Any intelligent man may now, by resolutely applying himself for a few years to mathematics, learn more than the great Newton knew after half a century of study and meditation.

12. But it is not thus with music, with painting, or with sculpture. Still less is it thus with poetry. The progress of refinement rarely supplies these arts with better objects of imitation. It may indeed improve the instruments which are necessary to the mechanical operations of the musician, the sculptor, and the painter. But language, the machine of the poet, is best fitted for his purpose in its rudest state. Nations, like individuals, first perceive and then abstract. They advance from particular images to general terms. Hence the vocabulary of an enlightened society is philosophical, that of a half-civilized people is poetical.

13. This change in the language of men is

partly the cause and partly the effect of a corresponding change in the nature of their intellectual operations, of a change by which science gains and poetry loses. Generalization is necessary to the advancement of knowledge; but particularity is indispensable to the creations of the imagination. In proportion as men know more and think more, they look less at individuals and more at classes. They therefore make better theories and worse poems. They give us vague phrases instead of images, and personified qualities instead of men. They may be better able to analyze human nature than their predecessors. But analysis is not the business of the poet. His office is to portray, not to dissect. He may believe in a moral sense, like Shaftesbury; he may refer all human actions to self-interest, like Helvetius; or he may never think about the matter at all. His creed on such subjects will no more influence his poetry, properly so called, than the notions which a painter may have conceived respecting the lachrymal glands, or the circulation of the blood, will affect the tears of his Niobe, or the blushes of his Aurora. If Shakespeare had written a book on the motives of

human actions, it is by no means certain that it would have been a good one. It is extremely improbable that it would have contained half so much able reasoning on the subject as is to be found in the Fable of the Bees. But could Manderville have created an Iago? Well as he knew how to resolve characters into their elements, would he have been able to combine those elements in such a manner as to make up a man, a real, living, individual man?

14. Perhaps no person can be a poet, or can even enjoy poetry, without a certain unsoundness of mind, if anything which gives so much pleasure ought to be called unsoundness. By poetry we mean not all writing in verse, nor even all good writing in verse. Our definition excludes many metrical compositions which, on other grounds, deserve the highest praise. By poetry we mean the art of employing words in such a manner as to produce an illusion on the imagination, the art of doing by means of words what the painter does by means of colors. Thus the greatest of poets has described it, in lines universally admired for the vigor and felicity of their diction, and still

more valuable on account of the just notion which they convey of the art in which he excelled: —

> "As imagination bodies forth
> The forms of things unknown, the poet's pen
> Turns them to shapes, and gives to airy nothing
> A local habitation and a name."

These are the fruits of the "fine frenzy" which he ascribes to the poet, — a fine frenzy, doubtless, but still a frenzy. Truth, indeed, is essential to poetry; but it is the truth of madness. The reasonings are just; but the premises are false. After the first suppositions have been made, everything ought to be consistent; but those first suppositions require a degree of credulity which almost amounts to a partial and temporary derangement of the intellect. Hence of all people children are the most imaginative. They abandon themselves without reserve to every illusion. Every image which is strongly presented to their mental eye produces on them the effect of reality. No man, whatever his sensibility may be, is ever affected by Hamlet or Lear, as a little girl is affected by the story of poor Red Riding-hood. She knows that it is all false, that wolves cannot speak, that there are

no wolves in England. Yet in spite of her knowledge she believes; she weeps; she trembles; she dares not go into a dark room lest she should feel the teeth of the monster at her throat. Such is the despotism of the imagination over uncultivated minds.

15. In a rude state of society men are children with a greater variety of ideas. It is therefore in such a state of society that we may expect to find the poetical temperament in its highest perfection. In an enlightened age there will be much intelligence, much science, much philosophy, abundance of just classification and subtle analysis, abundance of wit and eloquence, abundance of verses, and even of good ones; but little poetry. Men will judge and compare; but they will not create. They will talk about the old poets, and comment on them, and to a certain degree enjoy them. But they will scarcely be able to conceive the effect which poetry produced on their ruder ancestors, the agony, the ecstasy, the plenitude of belief. The Greek Rhapsodists, according to Plato, could scarce recite Homer without falling into convulsions. The Mohawk hardly feels the scalping-

knife while he shouts his death-song. The power which the ancient bards of Wales and Germany exercised over their auditors seems to modern readers almost miraculous. Such feelings are very rare in a civilized community, and most rare among those who participate most in its improvements. They linger longest among the peasantry.

16. Poetry produces an illusion on the eye of the mind, as a magic lantern produces an illusion on the eye of the body. And, as the magic lantern acts best in a dark room, poetry effects its purpose most completely in a dark age. As the light of knowledge breaks in upon its exhibitions, as the outlines of certainty become more and more definite, and the shades of probability more and more distinct, the hues and lineaments of the phantoms which the poet calls up grow fainter and fainter. We cannot unite the incompatible advantages of reality and deception, the clear discernment of truth and the exquisite enjoyment of fiction.

17. He who, in an enlightened and literary society, aspires to be a great poet, must first become a little child. He must take to pieces the

whole web of his mind. He must unlearn much of that knowledge which has perhaps constituted hitherto his chief title to superiority. His very talents will be a hindrance to him. His difficulties will be proportioned to his proficiency in the pursuits which are fashionable among his contemporaries; and that proficiency will in general be proportioned to the vigor and activity of his mind. And it is well if, after all his sacrifices and exertions, his works do not resemble a lisping man or a modern ruin. We have seen in our own time great talents, intense labor, and long meditation, employed in this struggle against the spirit of the age, and employed, we will not say absolutely in vain, but with dubious success and feeble applause.

18. If these reasonings be just, no poet has ever triumphed over greater difficulties than Milton. He received a learned education: he was a profound and elegant classical scholar: he had studied all the mysteries of Rabbinical literature: he was intimately acquainted with every language of modern Europe, from which either pleasure or information was then to be derived. He was perhaps the only great poet of later times who has been

distinguished by the excellence of his Latin verse. The genius of Petrarch was scarcely of the first order; and his poems in the ancient language, though much praised by those who have never read them, are wretched compositions. Cowley, with all his admirable wit and ingenuity, had little imagination; nor indeed do we think his classical diction comparable to that of Milton. The authority of Johnson is against us on this point. But Johnson had studied the bad writers of the middle ages till he had become utterly insensible to the Augustan elegance, and was as ill qualified to judge between two Latin styles as a habitual drunkard to set up for a wine-taster.

19. Versification in a dead language is an exotic, a far-fetched, costly, sickly imitation of that which elsewhere may be found in healthful and spontaneous perfection. The soils on which this rarity flourishes are in general as ill-suited to the production of vigorous native poetry as the flower-pots of a hot-house to the growth of oaks. That the author of the Paradise Lost should have written the Epistle to Manso was truly wonderful. Never before were such marked originality and

such exquisite mimicry found together. Indeed, in all the Latin poems of Milton the artificial manner indispensable to such works is admirably preserved, while, at the same time, his genius gives to them a peculiar charm, an air of nobleness and freedom, which distinguishes them from all other writings of the same class. They remind us of amusements of those angelic warriors who composed the cohort of Gabriel: —

> "About him exercised heroic games
> The unarmed youth of heaven. But o'er their heads
> Celestial armory, shield, helm, and spear,
> Hung high, with diamond flaming and with gold."

We cannot look upon the sportive exercises for which the genius of Milton ungirds itself, without catching a glimpse of the gorgeous and terrible panoply which it is accustomed to wear. The strength of his imagination triumphed over every obstacle. So intense and ardent was the fire of his mind, that it not only was not suffocated beneath the weight of fuel, but penetrated the whole superincumbent mass with its own heat and radiance.

20. It is not our intention to attempt anything

like a complete examination of the poetry of Milton. The public has long been agreed as to the merit of the most remarkable passages, the incomparable harmony of the numbers, and the excellence of that style which no rival has been able to equal and no parodist to degrade, which displays in their highest perfection the idiomatic powers of the English tongue, and to which every ancient and every modern language has contributed something of grace, of energy, or of music. In the vast field of criticism on which we are entering, innumerable reapers have already put their sickles. Yet the harvest is so abundant that the negligent search of a straggling gleaner may be rewarded with a sheaf.

21. The most striking characteristic of the poetry of Milton is the extreme remoteness of the associations by means of which it acts on the reader. Its effect is produced, not so much by what it expresses, as by what it suggests; not so much by the ideas which it directly conveys, as by other ideas which are connected with them. He electrifies the mind through conductors. The most unimaginative man must understand the Iliad.

Homer gives him no choice, and requires from him no exertion, but takes the whole upon himself, and sets the images in so clear a light that it is impossible to be blind to them. The works of Milton cannot be comprehended or enjoyed unless the mind of the reader co-operate with that of the writer. He does not paint a finished picture, or play for a mere passive listener. He sketches, and leaves others to fill up the outline. He strikes the key-note, and expects his hearer to make out the melody.

22. We often hear of the magical influence of poetry. The expression in general means nothing; but, applied to the writings of Milton, it is most appropriate. His poetry acts like an incantation. Its merit lies less in its obvious meaning than in its occult power. There would seem, at first sight, to be no more in his words than in other words. But they are words of enchantment. No sooner are they pronounced, than the past is present and the distant near. New forms of beauty start at once into existence, and all the burial-places of the memory give up their dead. Change the structure of the sentence, substitute one syn-

onym for another, and the whole effect is destroyed. The spell loses its power; and he who should then hope to conjure with it would find himself as much mistaken as Cassim in the Arabian tale, when he stood crying, "Open Wheat," "Open Barley," to the door which obeyed no sound but "Open Sesame." The miserable failure of Dryden in his attempt to translate into his own diction some parts of the Paradise Lost, is a remarkable instance of this.

23. In support of these observations we may remark, that scarcely any passages in the poems of Milton are more generally known, or more frequently repeated, than those which are little more than muster-rolls of names. They are not always more appropriate or more melodious than other names. But they are charmed names. Every one of them is the first link in a long chain of associated ideas. Like the dwelling-place of our infancy revisited in manhood, like the song of our country heard in a strange land, they produce upon us an effect wholly independent of their intrinsic value. One transports us back to a remote period of history. Another places us among the novel

scenes and manners of a distant region. A third evokes all the dear classical recollections of childhood, the school-room, the dog-eared Virgil, the holiday, and the prize. A fourth brings before us the splendid phantoms of chivalrous romance, the trophied lists, the embroidered housings, the quaint devices, the haunted forests, the enchanted gardens, the achievements of enamoured knights, and the smiles of rescued princesses.

24. In none of the works of Milton is his peculiar manner more happily displayed than in the Allegro and the Penseroso. It is impossible to conceive that the mechanism of language can be brought to a more exquisite degree of perfection. These poems differ from others as atar of roses differs from ordinary rose-water, the close-packed essence from the thin, diluted mixture. They are indeed not so much poems as collections of hints, from each of which the reader is to make out a poem for himself. Every epithet is a text for a stanza.

25. The Comus and the Samson Agonistes are works which, though of very different merit, offer some marked points of resemblance. Both are

lyric poems in the form of plays. There are perhaps no two kinds of composition so essentially dissimilar as the drama and the ode. The business of the dramatist is to keep himself out of sight, and to let nothing appear but his characters. As soon as he attracts notice to his personal feelings, the illusion is broken. The effect is as unpleasant as that which is produced on the stage by the voice of a prompter or the entrance of a scene-shifter. Hence it was that the tragedies of Byron were his least successful performances. They resemble those pasteboard pictures invented by the friend of children, Mr. Newbery, in which a single movable head goes round twenty different bodies, so that the same face looks out upon us, successively, from the uniform of a hussar, the furs of a judge, and the rags of a beggar. In all the characters, patriots and tyrants, haters and lovers, the frown and sneer of Harold were discernible in an instant. But this species of egotism, though fatal to the drama, is the inspiration of the ode. It is the part of the lyric poet to abandon himself, without reserve, to his own emotions.

26. Between these hostile elements many great

men have endeavored to effect an amalgamation, but never with complete success. The Greek Drama, on the model of which the Samson was written, sprang from the Ode. The dialogue was ingrafted on the chorus, and naturally partook of its character. The genius of the greatest of the Athenian dramatists coöperated with the circumstances under which tragedy made its first appearance. Æschylus was, head and heart, a lyric poet. In his time the Greeks had far more intercourse with the East than in the days of Homer; and they had not yet acquired that immense superiority in war, in science, and in the arts, which, in the following generation, led them to treat the Asiatics with contempt. From the narrative of Herodotus it should seem that they still looked up, with the veneration of disciples, to Egypt and Assyria. At this period, accordingly, it was natural that the literature of Greece should be tinctured with the Oriental style. And that style, we think, is discernible in the works of Pindar and Æschylus. The latter often reminds us of the Hebrew writers. The book of Job, indeed, in conduct and diction, bears a considerable resemblance to some of his

[illegible] his works are
[illegible] they are those
[illegible] examine the address
[illegible] Agamemnon on his return, or
[illegible] the seven Argive chiefs, by the
[illegible] dramatic writing, we shall instantly
[illegible] monstrous. But if we forget the
[illegible] think only of the poetry, we shall
[illegible] has never been surpassed in energy
[illegible] Sophocles made the Greek
[illegible] dramatic as was consistent with its
[illegible] His portraits of men have a sort of
[illegible] it is the similarity not of a paint-
[illegible] bas-relief. It suggests a resem-
[illegible] does not produce an illusion.
[illegible] to carry the reform further.
[illegible] beyond his powers, perhaps
[illegible] Instead of correcting what
[illegible] removed what was excellent. He
[illegible] for stilts, bad sermons for

[illegible] known, admired Euripides
[illegible] than, in our opinion,
[illegible] Indeed, the caresses which

this partiality leads our countryman to bestow on "sad Electra's poet," sometimes remind us of the beautiful Queen of Fairyland kissing the long ears of Bottom. At all events, there can be no doubt that this veneration for the Athenian, whether just or not, was injurious to the Samson Agonistes. Had Milton taken Æschylus for his model, he would have given himself up to the lyric inspiration, and poured out profusely all the treasures of his mind, without bestowing a thought on those dramatic proprieties which the nature of the work rendered it impossible to preserve. In the attempt to reconcile things in their own nature inconsistent, he has failed, as every one else must have failed. We cannot identify ourselves with the characters, as in a good play. We cannot identify ourselves with the poet, as in a good ode. The conflicting ingredients, like an acid and an alkali mixed, neutralize each other. We are by no means insensible to the merits of this celebrated piece, to the severe dignity of the style, the graceful and pathetic solemnity of the opening speech, or the wild and barbaric melody which gives so striking an effect to the choral passages. But we think it,

we confess, the least successful effort of the genius of Milton.

28. The Comus is framed on the model of the Italian Masque, as the Samson is framed on the model of the Greek Tragedy. It is certainly the noblest performance of the kind which exists in any language. It is as far superior to the Faithful Shepherdess, as the Faithful Shepherdess is to the Aminta or the Aminta to the Pastor Fido. It was well for Milton that he had here no Euripides to mislead him. He understood and loved the literature of modern Italy. But he did not feel for it the same veneration which he entertained for the remains of Athenian and Roman poetry, consecrated by so many lofty and endearing recollections. The faults, moreover, of his Italian predecessors were of a kind to which his mind had a deadly antipathy. He could stoop to a plain style, sometimes even to a bald style; but false brilliancy was his utter aversion. His Muse had no objection to a russet attire; but she turned with disgust from the finery of Guarini, as tawdry and as paltry as the rags of a chimney-sweeper on May-day. Whatever ornaments she wears are of

massive gold, not only dazzling to the sight, but capable of standing the severest test of the crucible.

29. Milton attended in the Comus to the distinction which he afterwards neglected in the Samson. He made his Masque what it ought to be, essentially lyrical, and dramatic only in semblance. He has not attempted a fruitless struggle against a defect inherent in the nature of that species of composition; and he has therefore succeeded, wherever success was not impossible. The speeches must be read as majestic soliloquies; and he who so reads them will be enraptured with their eloquence, their sublimity, and their music. The interruptions of the dialogue, however, impose a constraint upon the writer, and break the illusion of the reader. The finest passages are those which are lyric in form as well as in spirit. "I should much commend," says the excellent Sir Henry Wotton in a letter to Milton, "the tragical part, if the lyrical did not ravish me with a certain Dorique delicacy in your songs and odes, whereunto, I must plainly confess to you, I have seen yet nothing parallel in our language." The criticism was just. It is

when Milton escapes from the shackles of the dialogue, when he is discharged from the labor of uniting two incongruous styles, when he is at liberty to indulge his choral raptures without reserve, that he rises even above himself. Then, like his own good Genius bursting from the earthly form and weeds of Thyrsis, he stands forth in celestial freedom and beauty; he seems to cry exultingly,

> "Now my task is smoothly done,
> I can fly, or I can run,"

to skim the earth, to soar above the clouds, to bathe in the Elysian dew of the rainbow, and to inhale the balmy smells of nard and cassia, which the musky wings of the zephyr scatter through the cedared alleys of the Hesperides.

30. There are several of the minor poems of Milton on which we would willingly make a few remarks. Still more willingly would we enter into a detailed examination of that admirable poem, the Paradise Regained, which, strangely enough, is scarcely ever mentioned except as an instance of the blindness of the parental affection

which men of letters bear towards the offspring of their intellects. That Milton was mistaken in preferring this work, excellent as it is, to the Paradise Lost, we readily admit. But we are sure that the superiority of the Paradise Lost to the Paradise Regained is not more decided than the superiority of the Paradise Regained to every poem which has since made its appearance. Our limits, however, prevent us from discussing the point at length. We hasten on to that extraordinary production which the general suffrage of critics has placed in the highest class of human compositions.

31. The only poem of modern times which can be compared with the Paradise Lost is the Divine Comedy. The subject of Milton, in some points, resembled that of Dante; but he has treated it in a widely different manner. We cannot, we think, better illustrate our opinion respecting our own great poet, than by contrasting him with the father of Tuscan literature.

32. The poetry of Milton differs from that of Dante as the hieroglyphics of Egypt differed from the picture-writing of Mexico. The images which

Dante employs speak for themselves; they stand simply for what they are. Those of Milton have a signification which is often discernible only to the initiated. Their value depends less on what they directly represent than on what they remotely suggest. However strange, however grotesque, may be the appearance which Dante undertakes to describe, he never shrinks from describing it. He gives us the shape, the color, the sound, the smell, the taste; he counts the numbers; he measures the size. His similes are the illustrations of a traveller. Unlike those of other poets, and especially of Milton, they are introduced in a plain, business-like manner; not for the sake of any beauty in the objects from which they are drawn; not for the sake of any ornament which they may impart to the poem; but simply in order to make the meaning of the writer as clear to the reader as it is to himself. The ruins of the precipice which led from the sixth to the seventh circle of hell were like those of the rock which fell into the Adige on the south of Trent. The cataract of Phlegethon was like that of Aqua Cheta at the monastery of St. Benedict. The place where the

heretics were confined in burning tombs resembled the vast cemetery of Arles.

33. Now let us compare with the exact details of Dante the dim intimations of Milton. We will cite a few examples. The English poet has never thought of taking the measure of Satan. He gives us merely a vague idea of vast bulk. In one passage the fiend lies stretched out, huge in length, floating many a rood, equal in size to the earth-born enemies of Jove, or to the sea-monster which the mariner mistakes for an island. When he addresses himself to battle against the guardian angels, he stands like Teneriffe or Atlas: his stature reaches the sky. Contrast with these descriptions the lines in which Dante has described the gigantic spectre of Nimrod. "His face seemed to me as long and as broad as the ball of St. Peter's at Rome; and his other limbs were in proportion; so that the bank, which concealed him from the waist downwards, nevertheless showed so much of him, that three tall Germans would in vain have attempted to reach his hair." We are sensible that we do no justice to the admirable style of the Florentine poet. But Mr. Cary's

translation is not at hand; and our version, however rude, is sufficient to illustrate our meaning.

34. Once more, compare the lazar-house in the eleventh book of the Paradise Lost with the last ward of Malebolge in Dante. Milton avoids the loathsome details, and takes refuge in indistinct but solemn and tremendous imagery: Despair hurrying from couch to couch to mock the wretches with his attendance; Death shaking his dart over them, but, in spite of supplications, delaying to strike. What says Dante? "There was such a moan there as there would be if all the sick who, between July and September, are in the hospitals of Valdichiana, and of the Tuscan swamps, and of Sardinia, were in one pit together; and such a stench was issuing forth as is wont to issue from decayed limbs."

35. We will not take upon ourselves the invidious office of settling precedency between two such writers. Each in his own department is incomparable; and each, we may remark, has wisely, or fortunately, taken a subject adapted to exhibit his peculiar talent to the greatest advantage. The Divine Comedy is a personal narrative. Dante is

the eye-witness and ear-witness of that which he relates. He is the very man who has heard the tormented spirits crying out for the second death; who has read the dusky characters on the portal within which there is no hope; who has hidden his face from the terrors of the Gorgon; who has fled from the hooks and the seething pitch of Barbariccia and Draghignazzo. His own hands have grasped the shaggy sides of Lucifer. His own feet have climbed the mountain of expiation. His own brow has been marked by the purifying angel. The reader would throw aside such a tale in incredulous disgust, unless it were told with the strongest air of veracity, with a sobriety even in its horrors, with the greatest precision and multiplicity in its details. The narrative of Milton in this respect differs from that of Dante, as the adventures of Amadis differ from those of Gulliver. The author of Amadis would have made his book ridiculous if he had introduced those minute particulars which give such a charm to the work of Swift: the nautical observations, the affected delicacy about names, the official documents transcribed at full length, and all the unmeaning gossip

and scandal of the court, springing out of nothing, and tending to nothing. We are not shocked at being told that a man who lived, nobody knows when, saw many very strange sights, and we can easily abandon ourselves to the illusion of the romance. But when Lemuel Gulliver, surgeon, resident at Rotherhithe, tells us of pygmies and giants, flying islands, and philosophizing horses, nothing but such circumstantial touches could produce for a single moment a deception on the imagination.

36. Of all the poets who have introduced into their works the agency of supernatural beings, Milton has succeeded best. Here Dante decidedly yields to him; and as this is a point on which many rash and ill-considered judgments have been pronounced, we feel inclined to dwell on it a little longer. The most fatal error which a poet can possibly commit in the management of his machinery, is that of attempting to philosophize too much. Milton has been often censured for ascribing to spirits many functions of which spirits must be incapable. But these objections, though sanctioned by eminent names, originate, we ven-

ture to say, in profound ignorance of the art of poetry.

37. What is spirit? What are our own minds, the portion of spirit with which we are best acquainted? We observe certain phenomena. We cannot explain them into material causes. We therefore infer that there exists something which is not material. But of this something we have no idea. We can define it only by negatives. We can reason about it only by symbols. We use the word; but we have no image of the thing; and the business of poetry is with images, and not with words. The poet uses words indeed; but they are merely the instruments of his art, not its objects. They are the materials which he is to dispose in such a manner as to present a picture to the mental eye. And if they are not so disposed, they are no more entitled to be called poetry than a bale of canvas and a box of colors to be called a painting.

38. Logicians may reason about abstractions. But the great mass of men must have images. The strong tendency of the multitude in all ages and nations to idolatry can be explained on no other principle. The first inhabitants of Greece, there

is reason to believe, worshipped one invisible Deity. But the necessity of having something more definite to adore produced, in a few centuries, the innumerable crowd of gods and goddesses. In like manner the ancient Persians thought it impious to exhibit the Creator under a human form. Yet even these transferred to the Sun the worship which, in speculation, they considered due only to the Supreme Mind. The history of the Jews is the record of a continued struggle between pure Theism, supported by the most terrible sanctions, and the strangely fascinating desire of having some visible and tangible object of adoration. Perhaps none of the secondary causes which Gibbon has assigned for the rapidity with which Christianity spread over the world, while Judaism scarcely ever acquired a proselyte, operated more powerfully than this feeling. God, the uncreated, the incomprehensible, the invisible, attracted few worshippers. A philosopher might admire so noble a conception; but the crowd turned away in disgust from words which presented no image to their minds. It was before Deity, embodied in a human form, walking

among men, partaking of their infirmities, leaning on their bosoms, weeping over their graves, slumbering in the manger, bleeding on the cross, that the prejudices of the Synagogue, and the doubts of the Academy, and the pride of the Portico, and the fasces of the Lictor, and the swords of thirty legions, were humbled in the dust. Soon after Christianity had achieved its triumph, the principle which had assisted it began to corrupt it. It became a new Paganism. Patron saints assumed the offices of household gods. St. George took the place of Mars. St. Elmo consoled the mariner for the loss of Castor and Pollux. The Virgin Mother and Cecilia succeeded to Venus and the Muses. The fascination of sex and loveliness was again joined to that of celestial dignity; and the homage of chivalry was blended with that of religion. Reformers have often made a stand against these feelings; but never with more than apparent and partial success. The men who demolished the images in cathedrals have not always been able to demolish those which were enshrined in their minds. It would not be difficult to show that in politics the same rule holds

good. Doctrines, we are afraid, must generally be embodied before they can excite a strong public feeling. The multitude is more easily interested for the most unmeaning badge, or the most insignificant name, than for the most important principle.

39. From these considerations, we infer that no poet who should affect that metaphysical accuracy for the want of which Milton has been blamed, would escape a disgraceful failure. Still, however, there was another extreme which, though far less dangerous, was also to be avoided. The imaginations of men are in a great measure under the control of their opinions. The most exquisite art of poetical coloring can produce no illusion when it is employed to represent that which is at once perceived to be incongruous and absurd. Milton wrote in an age of philosophers and theologians. It was necessary, therefore, for him to abstain from giving such a shock to their understandings as might break the charm which it was his object to throw over their imaginations. This is the real explanation of the indistinctness and inconsistency with which he has often been reproached. Dr.

Johnson acknowledges that it was absolutely necessary that the spirits should be clothed with material forms. "But," says he, "the poet should have secured the consistency of his system by keeping immateriality out of sight, and seducing the reader to drop it from his thoughts." This is easily said; but what if Milton could not seduce his readers to drop immateriality from their thoughts? What if the contrary opinion had taken so full a possession of the minds of men as to leave no room even for the half-belief which poetry requires? Such we suspect to have been the case. It was impossible for the poet to adopt altogether the material or the immaterial system. He therefore took his stand on the debatable ground. He left the whole in ambiguity. He has doubtless, by so doing, laid himself open to the charge of inconsistency. But, though philosophically in the wrong, we cannot but believe that he was poetically in the right. This task, which almost any other writer would have found impracticable, was easy to him. The peculiar art which he possessed of communicating his meaning circuitously through a long succession of associated ideas, and of inti-

mating more than he expressed, enabled him to disguise those incongruities which he could not avoid.

40. Poetry which relates to the beings of another world ought to be at once mysterious and picturesque. That of Milton is so. That of Dante is picturesque indeed beyond any that ever was written. Its effect approaches to that produced by the pencil or the chisel. But it is picturesque to the exclusion of all mystery. This is a fault on the right side, a fault inseparable from the plan of Dante's poem, which, as we have already observed, rendered the utmost accuracy of description necessary. Still it is a fault. The supernatural agents excite an interest; but it is not the interest which is proper to supernatural agents. We feel that we could talk to the ghosts and demons, without any emotion of unearthly awe. We could, like Don Juan, ask them to supper, and eat heartily in their company. Dante's angels are good men with wings. His devils are spiteful, ugly executioners. His dead men are merely living men in strange situations. The scene which passes between the poet and Farinata is justly celebrated. Still, Fari-

nata in the burning tomb is exactly what Farinata would have been at an *auto da fé*. Nothing can be more touching than the first interview of Dante and Beatrice. Yet what is it, but a lovely woman chiding, with sweet austere composure, the lover for whose affection she is grateful, but whose vices she reprobates? The feelings which give the passage its charm would suit the streets of Florence as well as the summit of the Mount of Purgatory.

41. The spirits of Milton are unlike those of almost all other writers. His fiends, in particular, are wonderful creations. They are not metaphysical abstractions. They are not wicked men. They are not ugly beasts. They have no horns, no tails, none of the fee-faw-fum of Tasso and Klopstock. They have just enough in common with human nature to be intelligible to human beings. Their characters are, like their forms, marked by a certain dim resemblance to those of men, but exaggerated to gigantic dimensions, and veiled in mysterious gloom.

42. Perhaps the gods and demons of Æschylus may best bear a comparison with the angels and devils of Milton. The style of the Athenian had,

as we have remarked, something of the Oriental character; and the same peculiarity may be traced in his mythology. It has nothing of the amenity and elegance which we generally find in the superstitions of Greece. All is rugged, barbaric, and colossal. The legends of Æschylus seem to harmonize less with the fragrant groves and graceful porticoes in which his countrymen paid their vows to the God of Light and Goddess of Desire, than with those huge and grotesque labyrinths of eternal granite in which Egypt enshrined her mystic Osiris, or in which Hindostan still bows down to her seven-headed idols. His favorite gods are those of the elder generation, the sons of heaven and earth, compared with whom Jupiter himself was a stripling and an upstart, the gigantic Titans, and the inexorable Furies. Foremost among his creations of this class stands Prometheus, half fiend, half redeemer, the friend of man, the sullen and implacable enemy of heaven. Prometheus bears undoubtedly a considerable resemblance to the Satan of Milton. In both we find the same impatience of control, the same ferocity, the same unconquerable pride. In both characters also are

mingled, though in very different proportions, some kind and generous feelings. Prometheus, however, is hardly superhuman enough. He talks too much of his chains and his uneasy posture; he is rather too much depressed and agitated. His resolution seems to depend on the knowledge which he possesses that he holds the fate of his torturer in his hands, and that the hour of his release will surely come. But Satan is a creature of another sphere. The might of his intellectual nature is victorious over the extremity of pain. Amidst agonies which cannot be conceived without horror, he deliberates, resolves, and even exults. Against the sword of Michael, against the thunder of Jehovah, against the flaming lake, and the marl burning with solid fire, against the prospect of an eternity of unintermitted misery, his spirit bears up unbroken, resting on its own innate energies, requiring no support from anything external, nor even from hope itself.

43. To return for a moment to the parallel which we have been attempting to draw between Milton and Dante, we would add that the poetry of these great men has in a considerable degree

taken its character from their moral qualities. They are not egotists. They rarely obtrude their idiosyncrasies on their readers. They have nothing in common with those modern beggars for fame who extort a pittance from the compassion of the inexperienced by exposing the nakedness and sores of their minds. Yet it would be difficult to name two writers whose works have been more completely, though undesignedly, colored by their personal feelings.

44. The character of Milton was peculiarly distinguished by loftiness of spirit; that of Dante by intensity of feeling. In every line of the Divine Comedy we discern the asperity which is produced by pride struggling with misery. There is perhaps no work in the world so deeply and uniformly sorrowful. The melancholy of Dante was no fantastic caprice. It was not, as far as at this distance of time can be judged, the effect of external circumstances. It was from within. Neither love nor glory, neither the conflicts of earth nor the hope of heaven, could dispel it. It turned every consolation and every pleasure into its own nature. It resembled that noxious Sardinian soil of which

the intense bitterness is said to have been perceptible even in its honey. His mind was, in the noble language of the Hebrew poet, "a land of darkness, as darkness itself, and where the light was as darkness." The gloom of his character discolors all the passions of men and all the face of nature, and tinges with its own livid hue the flowers of Paradise and the glories of the eternal throne. All the portraits of him are singularly characteristic. No person can look on the features, noble even to ruggedness, the dark furrows of the cheek, the haggard and woful stare of the eye, the sullen and contemptuous curve of the lip, and doubt that they belong to a man too proud and too sensitive to be happy.

45. Milton was, like Dante, a statesman and a lover; and, like Dante, he had been unfortunate in ambition and in love. He had survived his health and his sight, the comforts of his home, and the prosperity of his party. Of the great men by whom he had been distinguished at his entrance into life, some had been taken away from the evil to come; some had carried into foreign climates their unconquerable hatred of oppression; some

were pining in dungeons; and some had poured forth their blood on scaffolds. Venal and licentious scribblers, with just sufficient talent to clothe the thoughts of a pandar in the style of a bellman, were now the favorite writers of the Sovereign and of the public. It was a loathsome herd, which could be compared to nothing so fitly as to the rabble of Comus, grotesque monsters, half bestial, half human, dropping with wine, bloated with gluttony, and reeling in obscene dances. Amidst these that fair Muse was placed, like the chaste lady of the Masque, lofty, spotless, and serene, to be chattered at, and pointed at, and grinned at, by the whole rout of Satyrs and Goblins. If ever despondency and asperity could be excused in any man, they might have been excused in Milton. But the strength of his mind overcame every calamity. Neither blindness, nor gout, nor age, nor penury, nor domestic afflictions, nor political disappointments, nor abuse, nor proscription, nor neglect, had power to disturb his sedate and majestic patience. His spirits do not seem to have been high, but they were singularly equable. His temper was serious, perhaps stern; but it was

a temper which no sufferings could render sullen or fretful. Such as it was when, on the eve of great events, he returned from his travels in the prime of health and manly beauty, loaded with literary distinctions, and glowing with patriotic hopes, such it continued to be when, after having experienced every calamity which is incident to our nature, old, poor, sightless, and disgraced, he retired to his hovel to die.

46. Hence it was that, though he wrote the Paradise Lost at a time of life when images of beauty and tenderness are in general beginning to fade, even from those minds in which they have not been effaced by anxiety and disappointment, he adorned it with all that is most lovely and delightful in the physical and in the moral world. Neither Theocritus nor Ariosto had a finer or a more healthful sense of the pleasantness of external objects, or loved better to luxuriate amidst sunbeams and flowers, the songs of nightingales, the juice of summer fruits, and the coolness of shady fountains. His conception of love unites all the voluptuousness of the Oriental harem, and all the gallantry of the chivalric tournament, with all

the pure and quiet affection of an English fireside. His poetry reminds us of the miracles of Alpine scenery. Nooks and dells, beautiful as fairyland, are embosomed in its most rugged and gigantic elevations. The roses and myrtles bloom unchilled on the verge of the avalanche.

47. Traces, indeed, of the peculiar character of Milton may be found in all his works; but it is most strongly displayed in the Sonnets. Those remarkable poems have been undervalued by critics who have not understood their nature. They have no epigrammatic point. There is none of the ingenuity of Filicaja in the thought, none of the hard and brilliant enamel of Petrarch in the style. They are simple but majestic records of the feelings of the poet; as little tricked out for the public eye as his diary would have been. A victory, an expected attack upon the city, a momentary fit of depression or exultation, a jest thrown out against one of his books, a dream which for a short time restored to him that beautiful face over which the grave had closed forever, led him to musings which, without effort, shaped themselves into verse. The unity of sentiment and severity

of style which characterize these little pieces remind us of the Greek Anthology, or perhaps still more of the Collects of the English Liturgy. The noble poem on the Massacres of Piedmont is strictly a collect in verse.

48. The Sonnets are more or less striking, according as the occasions which gave birth to them are more or less interesting. But they are, almost without exception, dignified by a sobriety and greatness of mind to which we know not where to look for a parallel. It would, indeed, be scarcely safe to draw any decided inferences as to the character of a writer from passages directly egotistical. But the qualities which we have ascribed to Milton, though perhaps most strongly marked in those parts of his works which treat of his personal feelings, are distinguishable in every page, and impart to all his writings, prose and poetry, English, Latin, and Italian, a strong family likeness.

49. His public conduct was such as was to be expected from a man of a spirit so high and of an intellect so powerful. He lived at one of the most memorable eras in the history of mankind;

at the very crisis of the great conflict between Oromasdes and Arimanes, liberty and despotism, reason and prejudice. That great battle was fought for no single generation, for no single land. The destinies of the human race were staked on the same cast with the freedom of the English people. Then were first proclaimed those mighty principles which have since worked their way into the depths of the American forests, which have roused Greece from the slavery and degradation of two thousand years, and which, from one end of Europe to the other, have kindled an unquenchable fire in the hearts of the oppressed, and loosed the knees of the oppressors with an unwonted fear.

50. Of those principles, then struggling for their infant existence, Milton was the most devoted and eloquent literary champion. We need not say how much we admire his public conduct. But we cannot disguise from ourselves that a large portion of his countrymen still think it unjustifiable. The civil war, indeed, has been more discussed, and is less understood, than any event in English history. The friends of liberty

labored under the disadvantage of which the lion in the fable complained so bitterly. Though they were the conquerors, their enemies were the painters. As a body, the Roundheads had done their utmost to decry and ruin literature; and literature was even with them, as, in the long run, it always is with its enemies. The best book on their side of the question is the charming narrative of Mrs. Hutchinson. May's History of the Parliament is good; but it breaks off at the most interesting crisis of the struggle. The performance of Ludlow is foolish and violent; and most of the later writers who have espoused the same cause, Oldmixon, for instance, and Catherine Macaulay, have, to say the least, been more distinguished by zeal than either by candor or by skill. On the other side are the most authoritative and the most popular historical works in our language, that of Clarendon, and that of Hume. The former is not only ably written and full of valuable information, but has also an air of dignity and sincerity which makes even the prejudices and errors with which it abounds respectable. Hume, from whose fascinating narative the great

mass of the reading public are still contented to take their opinions, hated religion so much that he hated liberty for having been allied with religion, and has pleaded the cause of tyranny with the dexterity of an advocate, while affecting the impartiality of a judge.

51. The public conduct of Milton must be approved or condemned, according as the resistance of the people to Charles the First shall appear to be justifiable or criminal. We shall therefore make no apology for dedicating a few pages to the discussion of that interesting and most important question. We shall not argue it on general grounds. We shall not recur to those primary principles from which the claim of any government to the obedience of its subjects is to be deduced. We are entitled to that vantage-ground; but we will relinquish it. We are, on this point, so confident of superiority, that we are not unwilling to imitate the ostentatious generosity of those ancient knights, who vowed to joust without helmet or shield against all enemies, and to give their antagonists the advantage of sun and wind. We will take the

naked constitutional question. We confidently affirm, that every reason which can be urged in favor of the Revolution of 1688 may be urged with at least equal force in favor of what is called the Great Rebellion.

52. In one respect only, we think, can the warmest admirers of Charles venture to say that he was a better sovereign than his son. He was not, in name and profession, a Papist; we say in name and profession, because both Charles himself and his creature Laud, while they abjured the innocent badges of Popery, retained all its worst vices, a complete subjection of reason to authority, a weak preference of form to substance, a childish passion for mummeries, an idolatrous veneration for the priestly character, and, above all, a merciless intolerance. This, however, we waive. We will concede that Charles was a good Protestant; but we say that his Protestantism does not make the slightest distinction between his case and that of James.

53. The principles of the Revolution have often been grossly misrepresented, and never more than in the course of the present year. There is

a certain class of men who, while they profess to hold in reverence the great names and great actions of former times, never look at them for any other purpose than in order to find in them some excuse for existing abuses. In every venerable precedent they pass by what is essential, and take only what is accidental: they keep out of sight what is beneficial, and hold up to public imitation all that is defective. If, in any part of any great example, there be anything unsound, these flesh-flies detect it with an unerring instinct, and dart upon it with a ravenous delight. If some good end has been attained in spite of them, they feel, with their prototype, that

> "Their labor must be to pervert that end,
> And out of good still to find means of evil."

54. To the blessings which England has derived from the Revolution these people are utterly insensible. The expulsion of a tyrant, the solemn recognition of popular rights, liberty, security, toleration, all go for nothing with them. One sect there was, which, from unfortunate temporary causes, it was thought necessary to keep under

close restraint. One part of the empire there was so unhappily circumstanced, that at that time its misery was necessary to our happiness, and its slavery to our freedom. These are the parts of the Revolution which the politicians of whom we speak love to contemplate, and which seem to them not indeed to vindicate, but in some degree to palliate, the good which it has produced. Talk to them of Naples, of Spain, or of South America. They stand forth zealots for the doctrine of Divine Right, which has now come back to us, like a thief from transportation, under the *alias* of Legitimacy. But mention the miseries of Ireland. Then William is a hero. Then Somers and Shrewsbury are great men. Then the Revolution is a glorious era. The very same persons who, in this country, never omit an opportunity of reviving every wretched Jacobite slander respecting the Whigs of that period, have no sooner crossed St. George's Channel, than they begin to fill their bumpers to the glorious and immortal memory. They may truly boast that they look not at men, but at measures. So that evil be done, they care not who does it; the arbitrary Charles or

the liberal William, Ferdinand the Catholic or Frederic the Protestant. On such occasions their deadliest opponents may reckon upon their candid construction. The bold assertions of these people have of late impressed a large portion of the public with an opinion that James the Second was expelled simply because he was a Catholic, and that the Revolution was essentially a Protestant Revolution.

55. But this certainly was not the case; nor can any person who has acquired more knowledge of the history of those times than is to be found in Goldsmith's Abridgment, believe that, if James had held his own religious opinions without wishing to make proselytes, or if, wishing even to make proselytes, he had contented himself with exerting only his constitutional influence for that purpose, the Prince of Orange would ever have been invited over. Our ancestors, we suppose, knew their own meaning; and, if we may believe them, their hostility was primarily not to popery, but to tyranny. They did not drive out a tyrant because he was a Catholic; but they excluded Catholics from the crown, because they thought them likely to be tyrants. The ground on which they, in their

famous resolution, declared the throne vacant, was this, "that James had broken the fundamental laws of the kingdom." Every man, therefore, who approves of the Revolution of 1688 must hold that the breach of fundamental laws on the part of the sovereign justifies resistance. The question, then, is this: Had Charles the First broken the fundamental laws of England?

56. No person can answer in the negative unless he refuses credit, not merely to all the accusations brought against Charles by his opponents, but to the narratives of the warmest Royalists, and to the confessions of the King himself. If there be any truth in any historian of any party who has related the events of that reign, the conduct of Charles, from his accession to the meeting of the Long Parliament, had been a continued course of oppression and treachery. Let those who applaud the Revolution and condemn the Rebellion mention one act of James the Second to which a parallel is not to be found in the history of his father. Let them lay their fingers on a single article in the Declaration of Right, presented by the two Houses to William and Mary,

which Charles is not acknowleded to have violated. He had, according to the testimony of his own friends, usurped the functions of the legislature, raised taxes without the consent of parliament, and quartered troops on the people in the most illegal and vexatious manner. Not a single session of parliament had passed without some unconstitutional attack on the freedom of debate. The right of petition was grossly violated; arbitrary judgments, exorbitant fines, and unwarranted imprisonments, were grievances of daily occurrence. If these things do not justify resistance, the Revolution was treason; if they do, the Great Rebellion was laudable.

57. But, it is said, why not adopt milder measures? Why, after the King had consented to so many reforms and renounced so many oppressive prerogatives, did the parliament continue to rise in their demands at the risk of provoking a civil war? The ship-money had been given up. The Star Chamber had been abolished. Provision had been made for the frequent convocation and secure deliberation of parliaments. Why not pursue an end confessedly good by peaceable and regular

means? We recur again to the analogy of the Revolution. Why was James driven from the throne? Why was he not retained upon conditions? He too had offered to call a free parliament, and to submit to its decision all the matters in dispute. Yet we are in the habit of praising our forefathers, who preferred a revolution, a disputed succession, a dynasty of strangers, twenty years of foreign and intestine war, a standing army, and a national debt, to the rule, however restricted, of a tried and proved tyrant. The Long Parliament acted on the same principle, and is entitled to the same praise. They could not trust the King. He had, no doubt, passed salutary laws; but what assurance was there that he would not break them? He had renounced oppressive prerogatives; but where was the security that he would not resume them? The nation had to deal with a man whom no tie could bind, a man who made and broke promises with equal facility, a man whose honor had been a hundred times pawned, and never redeemed.

58. Here, indeed, the Long Parliament stands on still stronger ground than the Convention of

1688. No action of James can be compared to the conduct of Charles with respect to the Petition of Right. The Lords and Commons present him with a bill in which the constitutional limits of his power are marked out. He hesitates; he evades; at last he bargains to give his assent for five subsidies. The bill receives his solemn assent: the subsidies are voted; but no sooner is the tyrant relieved than he returns at once to all the arbitrary measures which he had bound himself to abandon, and violates all the clauses of the very Act which he had been paid to pass.

59. For more than ten years the people had seen the rights which were theirs by a double claim, by immemorial inheritance, and by recent purchase, infringed by the perfidious King who had recognized them. At length circumstances compelled Charles to summon another parliament: another chance was given to our fathers: were they to throw it away as they had thrown away the former? Were they again to be cozened by *le Roi le veut?* Were they again to advance their money on pledges which had been forfeited over and over again? Were they to lay a second

Petition of Right at the foot of the throne, to grant another lavish aid in exchange for another unmeaning ceremony, and then to take their departure, till, after ten years more of fraud and oppression, their prince should again require a supply, and again repay it with a perjury? They were compelled to choose whether they would trust a tyrant or conquer him. We think that they chose wisely and nobly.

60. The advocates of Charles, like the advocates of other malefactors against whom overwhelming evidence is produced, generally decline all controversy about the facts, and content themselves with calling testimony to character. He had so many private virtues! And had James the Second no private virtues? Was Oliver Cromwell, his bitterest enemies themselves being judges, destitute of private virtues? And what, after all, are the virtues ascribed to Charles? A religious zeal, not more sincere than that of his son, and fully as weak and narrow-minded, and a few of the ordinary household decencies which half the tombstones in England claim for those who lie beneath them. A good father! A good husband!

Ample apologies indeed for fifteen years of persecution, tyranny, and falsehood!

61. We charge him with having broken his coronation oath; and we are told that he kept his marriage vow! We accuse him of having given up his people to the merciless inflictions of the most hot-headed and hard-hearted of prelates; and the defence is that he took his little son on his knee, and kissed him! We censure him for having violated the articles of the Petition of Right, after having, for good and valuable consideration, promised to observe them; and we are informed that he was accustomed to hear prayers at six o'clock in the morning! It is to such considerations as these, together with his Vandyke dress, his handsome face, and his peaked beard, that he owes, we verily believe, most of his popularity with the present generation.

62. For ourselves, we own that we do not understand the commom phrase, a good man, but a bad king. We can as easily conceive a good man and an unnatural father, or a good man and a treacherous friend. We cannot, in estimating the character of an individual, leave out of our

consideration his conduct in the most important of all human relations; and if in that relation we find him to have been selfish, cruel, and deceitful, we shall take the liberty to call him a bad man, in spite of all his temperance at table, and all his regularity at chapel.

63. We cannot refrain from adding a few words respecting a topic on which the defenders of Charles are fond of dwelling. If, they say, he governed his people ill, he at least governed them after the example of his predecessors. If he violated their privileges, it was because those privileges had not been accurately defined. No act of oppression has ever been imputed to him which has not a parallel in the annals of the Tudors. This point Hume has labored, with an art which is as discreditable in a historical work as it would be admirable in a forensic address. The answer is short, clear, and decisive. Charles had assented to the Petition of Right. He had renounced the oppressive powers said to have been exercised by his predecessors, and he had renounced them for money. He was not entitled to set up his antiquated claims against his own recent release.

64. These arguments are so obvious that it may seem superfluous to dwell upon them. But those who have observed how much the events of that time are misrepresented and misunderstood, will not blame us for stating the case simply. It is a case of which the simplest statement is the strongest.

65. The enemies of the Parliament, indeed, rarely choose to take issue on the great points of the question. They content themselves with exposing some of the crimes and follies to which public commotions necessarily give birth. They bewail the unmerited fate of Strafford. They execrate the lawless violence of the army. They laugh at the Scriptural names of the preachers. Major-generals fleecing their districts; soldiers revelling on the spoils of a ruined peasantry; upstarts, enriched by the public plunder, taking possession of the hospitable firesides and hereditary trees of the old gentry; boys smashing the beautiful windows of cathedrals; Quakers riding naked through the market-place; Fifth-monarchy men shouting for King Jesus; agitators lecturing from the tops of tubs on the fate of Agag; — all

these, they tell us, were the offspring of the Great Rebellion.

66. Be it so. We are not careful to answer in this matter. These charges, were they infinitely more important, would not alter our opinion of an event which alone has made us to differ from the slaves who crouch beneath despotic sceptres. Many evils, no doubt, were produced by the civil war. They were the price of our liberty. Has the acquisition been worth the sacrifice? It is the nature of the Devil of tyranny to tear and rend the body which he leaves. Are the miseries of continued possession less horrible than the struggles of the tremendous exorcism?

67. If it were possible that a people brought up under an intolerant and arbitrary system could subvert that system without acts of cruelty and folly, half the objections to despotic power would be removed. We should, in that case, be compelled to acknowledge that it at least produces no pernicious effects on the intellectual and moral character of a nation. We deplore the outrages which accompany revolutions. But the more violent the outrages, the more assured we feel that a

revolution was necessary. The violence of those outrages will always be proportioned to the ferocity and ignorance of the people; and the ferocity and ignorance of the people will be proportioned to the oppression and degradation under which they have been accustomed to live. Thus it was in our civil war. The heads of the church and state reaped only that which they had sown. The government had prohibited free discussion; it had done its best to keep the people unacquainted with their duties and their rights. The retribution was just and natural. If our rulers suffered from popular ignorance, it was because they had themselves taken away the key of knowledge. If they were assailed with blind fury, it was because they had exacted an equally blind submission.

68. It is the character of such revolutions that we always see the worst of them at first. Till men have been some time free, they know not how to use their freedom. The natives of wine countries are generally sober. In climates where wine is a rarity intemperance abounds. A newly liberated people may be compared to a northern army encamped on the Rhine or the Xeres. It

is said that, when soldiers in such a situation first find themselves able to indulge without restraint in such a rare and expensive luxury, nothing is to be seen but intoxication. Soon, however, plenty teaches discretion; and, after wine has been for a few months their daily fare, they become more temperate than they had ever been in their own country. In the same manner, the final and permanent fruits of liberty are wisdom, moderation, and mercy. Its immediate effects are often atrocious crimes, conflicting errors, scepticism on points the most clear, dogmatism on points the most mysterious. It is just at this crisis that its enemies love to exhibit it. They pull down the scaffolding from the half-finished edifice; they point to the flying dust, the falling bricks, the comfortless rooms, the frightful irregularity of the whole appearance; and then ask in scorn where the promised splendor and comfort is to be found. If such miserable sophisms were to prevail there would never be a good house or a good government in the world.

69. Ariosto tells a pretty story of a fairy, who, by some mysterious law of her nature, was con-

demned to appear at certain seasons in the form of a foul and poisonous snake. Those who injured her during the period of her disguise were forever excluded from participation in the blessings which she bestowed. But to those who, in spite of her loathsome aspect, pitied and protected her, she afterwards revealed herself in the beautiful and celestial form which was natural to her, accompanied their steps, granted all their wishes, filled their houses with wealth, made them happy in love and victorious in war. Such a spirit is liberty. At times she takes the form of a hateful reptile. She grovels, she hisses, she stings. But woe to those who in disgust shall venture to crush her! And happy are those who, having dared to receive her in her degraded and frightful shape, shall at length be rewarded by her in the time of her beauty and her glory!

70. There is only one cure for the evils which newly acquired freedom produces; and that cure is freedom. When a prisoner first leaves his cell he cannot bear the light of day: he is unable to discriminate colors, or recognize faces. But the remedy is, not to remand him into his dungeon,

but to accustom him to the rays of the sun. The blaze of truth and liberty may at first dazzle and bewilder nations which have become half blind in the house of bondage. But let them gaze on, and they will soon be able to bear it. In a few years men learn to reason. The extreme violence of opinions subsides. Hostile theories correct each other. The scattered elements of truth cease to contend, and begin to coalesce. And at length a system of justice and order is educed out of the chaos.

71. Many politicians of our time are in the habit of laying it down as a self-evident proposition, that no people ought to be free till they are fit to use their freedom. The maxim is worthy of the fool in the old story, who resolved not to go into the water till he had learned to swim. If men are to wait for liberty till they become wise and good in slavery, they may indeed wait forever.

72. Therefore it is that we decidedly approve of the conduct of Milton and the other wise and good men who, in spite of much that was ridiculous and hateful in the conduct of their associates, stood firmly by the cause of Public Liberty. We

are not aware that the poet has been charged with personal participation in any of the blamable excesses of that time. The favorite topic of his enemies is the line of conduct which he pursued with regard to the execution of the King. Of that celebrated proceeding we by no means approve. Still we must say, in justice to the many eminent persons who concurred in it, and in justice more particularly to the eminent person who defended it, that nothing can be more absurd than the imputations which, for the last hundred and sixty years, it has been the fashion to cast upon the Regicides. We have, throughout, abstained from appealing to first principles. We will not appeal to them now. We recur again to the parallel case of the Revolution. What essential distinction can be drawn between the execution of the father and the deposition of the son? What constitutional maxim is there which applies to the former and not to the latter? The King can do no wrong. If so, James was as innocent as Charles could have been. The minister only ought to be responsible for the acts of the Sovereign. If so, why not impeach Jeffreys and retain

James? The person of a King is sacred. Was the person of James considered sacred at the Boyne? To discharge cannon against an army in which a king is known to be posted is to approach pretty near to regicide. Charles, too, it should always be remembered, was put to death by men who had been exasperated by the hostilities of several years, and who had never been bound to him by any other tie than that which was common to them with all their fellow citizens. Those who drove James from his throne, who seduced his army, who alienated his friends, who first imprisoned him in his palace, and then turned him out of it, who broke in upon his very slumbers by imperious messages, who pursued him with fire and sword from one part of the empire to another, who hanged, drew, and quartered his adherents, and attainted his innocent heir, were his nephew and his two daughters. When we reflect on all these things, we are at a loss to conceive how the same persons who, on the fifth of November, thank God for wonderfully conducting his servant William, and for making all opposition fall before him until he became our King and Governor, can,

on the thirtieth of January, contrive to be afraid that the blood of the Royal Martyr may be visited on themselves and their children.

73. We disapprove, we repeat, of the execution of Charles; not because the constitution exempts the King from responsibility, for we know that all such maxims, however excellent, have their exceptions; nor because we feel any peculiar interest in his character, for we think that his sentence describes him with perfect justice as "a tyrant, a traitor, a murderer, and a public enemy;" but because we are convinced that the measure was most injurious to the cause of freedom. He whom it removed was a captive and a hostage: his heir, to whom the allegiance of every Royalist was instantly transferred, was at large. The Presbyterians could never have been perfectly reconciled to the father; they had no such rooted enmity to the son. The great body of the people, also, contemplated that proceeding with feelings which, however unreasonable, no government could safely venture to outrage.

74. But though we think the conduct of the Regicides blamable, that of Milton appears to us

in a very different light. The deed was done. It could not be undone. The evil was incurred; and the object was to render it as small as possible. We censure the chiefs of the army for not yielding to the popular opinion; but we cannot censure Milton for wishing to change that opinion. The very feeling which would have restrained us from committing the act, would have led us, after it had been committed, to defend it against the ravings of servility and superstition. For the sake of public liberty we wish that the thing had not been done while the people disapproved of it. But, for the sake of public liberty, we should also have wished the people to approve of it when it was done. If anything more were wanting to the justification of Milton, the book of Salmasius would furnish it. That miserable performance is now with justice considered only as a beacon to word-catchers who wish to become statesmen. The celebrity of the man who refuted it, the "Æneæ magni dextra," gives it all its fame with the present generation. In that age the state of things was different. It was not then fully understood how vast an interval separates the

mere classical scholar from the political philosopher. Nor can it be doubted that a treatise which, bearing the name of so eminent a critic, attacked the fundamental principles of all free governments, must, if suffered to remain unanswered, have produced a most pernicious effect on the public mind.

75. We wish to add a few words relative to another subject, on which the enemies of Milton delight to dwell, — his conduct during the administration of the Protector. That an enthusiastic votary of liberty should accept office under a military usurper seems, no doubt, at first sight, extraordinary. But all the circumstances in which the country was then placed were extraordinary. The ambition of Oliver was of no vulgar kind. He never seems to have coveted despotic power. He at first fought sincerely and manfully for the Parliament, and never deserted it till it had deserted its duty. If he dissolved it by force, it was not till he found that the few members who remained after so many deaths, secessions, and expulsions, were desirous to appropriate to themselves a power which they held only in trust,

and to inflict upon England the curse of a Venetian oligarchy. But even when thus placed by violence at the head of affairs, he did not assume unlimited power. He gave the country a constitution far more perfect than any which had at that time been known in the world. He reformed the representative system in a manner which has extorted praise even from Lord Clarendon. For himself he demanded indeed the first place in the commonwealth; but with powers scarcely so great as those of a Dutch stadtholder or an American president. He gave the Parliament a voice in the appointment of ministers, and left to it the whole legislative authority, not even reserving to himself a veto on its enactments; and he did not require that the chief magistracy should be hereditary in his family. Thus far, we think, if the circumstances of the time and the opportunities which he had of aggrandizing himself be fairly considered, he will not lose by comparison with Washington or Bolivar. Had his moderation been met by corresponding moderation, there is no reason to think that he would have overstepped the line which he had traced for himself. But when he

found that his parliaments questioned the authority under which they met, and that he was in danger of being deprived of the restricted power which was absolutely necessary to his personal safety, then, it must be acknowledged, he adopted a more arbitrary policy.

76. Yet, though we believe that the intentions of Cromwell were at first honest, though we believe that he was driven from the noble course which he had marked out for himself by the almost irresistible force of circumstances, though we admire, in common with all men of all parties, the ability and energy of his splendid administration, we are not pleading for arbitrary and lawless power, even in his hands. We know that a good constitution is infinitely better than the best despot. But we suspect, that at the time of which we speak, the violence of religious and political enmities rendered a stable and happy settlement next to impossible. The choice lay, not between Cromwell and liberty, but between Cromwell and the Stuarts. That Milton chose well, no man can doubt who fairly compares the events of the protectorate with those of the thirty

years which succeeded it, the darkest and most disgraceful in the English annals. Cromwell was evidently laying, though in an irregular manner, the foundations of an admirable system. Never before had religious liberty and the freedom of discussion been enjoyed in a greater degree. Never had the national honor been better upheld abroad, or the seat of justice better filled at home. And it was rarely that any opposition which stopped short of open rebellion provoked the resentment of the liberal and magnanimous usurper. The institutions which he had established, as set down in the Instrument of Government and the Humble Petition and Advice, were excellent. His practice, it is true, too often departed from the theory of these institutions. But had he lived a few years longer, it is probable that his institutions would have survived him, and that his arbitrary practice would have died with him. His power had not been consecrated by ancient prejudices. - It was upheld only by his great personal qualities. Little, therefore, was to be dreaded from a second protector, unless he were also a second Oliver Cromwell. The events

which followed his decease are the most complete vindication of those who exerted themselves to uphold his authority. His death dissolved the whole frame of society. The army rose against the Parliament, the different corps of the army against each other. Sect raved against sect. Party plotted against party. The Presbyterians, in their eagerness to be revenged on the Independents, sacrificed their own liberty, and deserted all their old principles. Without casting one glance on the past, or requiring one stipulation for the future, they threw down their freedom at the feet of the most frivolous and heartless of tyrants.

77. Then came those days, never to be recalled without a blush, the days of servitude without loyalty, and sensuality without love; of dwarfish talents and gigantic vices; the paradise of cold hearts and narrow minds; the golden age of the coward, the bigot, and the slave. The King cringed to his rival that he might trample on his people, sank into a viceroy of France, and pocketed with complacent infamy her degrading insults and her more degrading gold. The caresses of harlots, and the jests of buffoons, regu-

lated the policy of the state. The government had just ability enough to deceive, and just religion enough to persecute. The principles of liberty were the scoff of every grinning courtier, and the Anathema Maranatha of every fawning dean. In every high place, worship was paid to Charles and James, Belial and Moloch; and England propitiated those obscene and cruel idols with the blood of her best and bravest children. Crime succeeded to crime, and disgrace to disgrace, till the race, accursed of God and man, was a second time driven forth, to wander on the face of the earth, and to be a byword and a shaking of the head to the nations.

78. Most of the remarks which we have hitherto made on the public character of Milton, apply to him only as one of a large body. We shall proceed to notice some of the peculiarities which distinguished him from his contemporaries. And for that purpose it is necessary to take a short survey of the parties into which the political world was at that time divided. We must premise that our observations are intended to apply only to those who adhered, from a sincere preference,

to one or to the other side. In days of public commotion every faction, like an Oriental army, is attended by a crowd of camp-followers, a useless and heartless rabble, who prowl round its line of march in the hope of picking up something under its protection, but desert it in the day of battle, and often join to exterminate it after a defeat. England, at the time of which we are treating, abounded with fickle and selfish politicians, who transferred their support to every government as it rose; who kissed the hand of the king in 1640, and spat in his face in 1649; who shouted with equal glee when Cromwell was inaugurated in Westminster Hall, and when he was dug up to be hanged at Tyburn; who dined on calves' heads, or stuck up oak-branches, as circumstances altered, without the slightest shame or repugnance. These we leave out of the account. We take our estimate of parties from those who really deserve to be called partisans.

79. We would speak first of the Puritans, the most remarkable body of men, perhaps, which the world has ever produced. The odious and ridiculous parts of their character lie on the surface.

He that runs may read them; nor have there been wanting attentive and malicious observers to point them out. For many years after the Restoration, they were the theme of unmeasured invective and derision. They were exposed to the utmost licentiousness of the press and of the stage, at the time when the press and the stage were most licentious. They were not men of letters; they were, as a body, unpopular; they could not defend themselves; and the public would not take them under its protection. They were therefore abandoned, without reserve, to the tender mercies of the satirists and dramatists. The ostentatious simplicity of their dress, their sour aspect, their nasal twang, their stiff posture, their long graces, their Hebrew names, the Scriptural phrases which they introduced on every occasion, their contempt of human learning, their detestation of polite amusements, were indeed fair game for the laughers. But it is not from the laughers alone that the philosophy of history is to be learned. And he who approaches this subject should carefully guard against the influence of that potent ridicule which has already misled so many excellent writers.

"Ecco il fonte del riso, ed ecco il rio
Che mortali perigli in se contiene:
Hor qui tener a fren nostro desio,
Ed esser cauti molto a noi conviene."

80. Those who roused the people to resistance; who directed their measures through a long series of eventful years; who formed, out of the most unpromising materials, the finest army that Europe had ever seen; who trampled down King, Church, and Aristocracy; who, in the short intervals of domestic sedition and rebellion, made the name of England terrible to every nation on the face of the earth, were no vulgar fanatics. Most of their absurdities were mere external badges, like the signs of freemasonry, or the dresses of friars. We regret that these badges were not more attractive. We regret that a body to whose courage and talents mankind has owed inestimable obligations had not the lofty elegance which distinguished some of the adherents of Charles the First, or the easy good-breeding for which the Court of Charles the Second was celebrated. But, if we must make our choice, we shall, like Bassanio in the play, turn from the specious caskets which contain only

the Death's head and the Fool's head, and fix on the plain leaden chest which conceals the treasure.

81. The Puritans were men whose minds had derived a peculiar character from the daily contemplation of superior beings and eternal interests. Not content with acknowledging, in general terms, an overruling Providence, they habitually ascribed every event to the will of the Great Being, for whose power nothing was too vast, for whose inspection nothing was too minute. To know him, to serve him, to enjoy him, was with them the great end of existence. They rejected with contempt the ceremonious homage which other sects substituted for the pure worship of the soul. Instead of catching occasional glimpses of the Deity through an obscuring veil, they aspired to gaze full on his intolerable brightness, and to commune with him face to face. Hence originated their contempt for terrestrial distinctions. The difference between the greatest and the meanest of mankind seemed to vanish, when compared with the boundless interval which separated the whole race from him on whom their own eyes were constantly fixed. They recognized no title to supe-

riority but his favor; and, confident of that favor, they despised all the accomplishments and all the dignities of the world If they were unacquainted with the works of philosophers and poets, they were deeply read in the oracles of God. If their names were not found in the registers of heralds, they were recorded in the Book of Life. If their steps were not accompanied by a splendid train of menials, legions of ministering angels had charge over them. Their palaces were houses not made with hands; their diadems crowns of glory which should never fade away. On the rich and the eloquent, on nobles and priests, they looked down with contempt; for they esteemed themselves rich in a more precious treasure, and eloquent in a more sublime language, nobles by the right of an earlier creation, and priests by the imposition of a mightier hand. The very meanest of them was a being to whose fate a mysterious and terrible importance belonged, on whose slightest action the spirits of light and darkness looked with anxious interest, who had been destined, before heaven and earth were created, to enjoy a felicity which should continue when heaven and earth

should have passed away. Events which short-sighted politicians ascribed to earthly causes, had been ordained on his account. For his sake empires had risen, and flourished and decayed. For his sake the Almighty had proclaimed his will by the pen of the Evangelist and the harp of the prophet. He had been wrested by no common deliverer from the grasp of no common foe. He had been ransomed by the sweat of no vulgar agony, by the blood of no earthly sacrifice. It was for him that the sun had been darkened, that the rocks had been rent, that the dead had risen, that all nature had shuddered at the sufferings of her expiring God.

82. Thus the Puritan was made up of two different men, the one all self-abasement, penitence, gratitude, passion; the other proud, calm, inflexible, sagacious. He prostrated himself in the dust before his Maker; but he set his foot on the neck of his king. In his devotional retirement, he prayed with convulsions, and groans, and tears. He was half maddened by glorious or terrible illusions. He heard the lyres of angels or the tempting whispers of fiends. He caught a gleam

of the Beatific Vision, or woke screaming from dreams of everlasting fire. Like Vane, he thought himself intrusted with the sceptre of the millennial year. Like Fleetwood, he cried in the bitterness of his soul that God had hid his face from him. But when he took his seat in the council, or girt on his sword for war, these tempestuous workings of the soul had left no perceptible trace behind them. People who saw nothing of the godly but their uncouth visages, and heard nothing from them but their groans and their whining hymns, might laugh at them. But those had little reason to laugh who encountered them in the hall of debate or in the field of battle. These fanatics brought to civil and military affairs a coolness of judgment and an immutability of purpose which some writers have thought inconsistent with their religious zeal, but which were in fact the necessary effects of it. The intensity of their feelings on one subject made them tranquil on every other. One overpowering sentiment had subjected to itself pity and hatred, ambition and fear. Death had lost its terrors and pleasure its charms. They had their smiles and their tears, their raptures and

their sorrows, but not for the things of this world. Enthusiasm had made them Stoics, had cleared their minds from every vulgar passion and prejudice, and raised them above the influence of danger and of corruption. It sometimes might lead them to pursue unwise ends, but never to choose unwise means. They went through the world, like Sir Artegal's iron man Talus with his flail, crushing and trampling down oppressors, mingling with human beings, but having neither part nor lot in human infirmities; insensible to fatigue, to pleasure, and to pain; not to be pierced by any weapon, not to be withstood by any barrier.

83. Such we believe to have been the character of the Puritans. We perceive the absurdity of their manners. We dislike the sullen gloom of their domestic habits. We acknowledge that the tone of their minds was often injured by straining after things too high for mortal reach; and we know that, in spite of their hatred of Popery, they too often fell into the worst vices of that bad system, intolerance and extravagant austerity; that they had their anchorites and their crusades, their

Dunstans and their De Montforts, their Dominics and their Escobars. Yet, when all circumstances are taken into consideration, we do not hesitate to pronounce them a brave, a wise, an honest, and a useful body.

84. The Puritans espoused the cause of civil liberty mainly because it was the cause of religion. There was another party, by no means numerous, but distinguished by learning and ability, which acted with them on very different principles. We speak of those whom Cromwell was accustomed to call the Heathens, men who were, in the phraseology of that time, doubting Thomases or careless Gallios with regard to religious subjects, but passionate worshippers of freedom. Heated by the study of ancient literature, they set up their country as their idol, and proposed to themselves the heroes of Plutarch as their examples. They seem to have borne some resemblance to the Brissotines of the French Revolution. But it is not very easy to draw the line of distinction between them and their devout associates, whose tone and manner they sometimes found it convenient to affect, and sometimes, it is probable, imperceptibly adopted.

85. We now come to the Royalists. We shall attempt to speak of them, as we have spoken of their antagonists, with perfect candor. We shall not charge upon a whole party the profligacy and baseness of the horse-boys, gamblers, and bravoes, whom the hope of license and plunder attracted from all the dens of Whitefriars to the standard of Charles, and who disgraced their associates by excesses which, under the stricter discipline of the Parliamentary armies, were never tolerated. We will select a more favorable specimen. Thinking as we do that the cause of the King was the cause of bigotry and tyranny, we yet cannot refrain from looking with complacency on the character of the honest old Cavaliers. We feel a national pride in comparing them with the instruments which the despots of other countries are compelled to employ, with the mutes who throng their antechambers, and the Janissaries who mount guard at their gates. Our royalist countrymen were not heartless, dangling courtiers, bowing at every step, and simpering at every word. They were not mere machines for destruction, dressed up in uniforms, caned into skill, intoxicated into valor,

defending without love, destroying without hatred. There was a freedom in their subserviency, a nobleness in their very degradation. The sentiment of individual independence was strong within them. They were indeed misled, but by no base or selfish motive. Compassion and romantic honor, the prejudices of childhood, and the venerable names of history, threw over them a spell potent as that of Duessa; and, like the Red-Cross Knight, they thought that they were doing battle for an injured beauty, while they defended a false and loathsome sorceress. In truth, they scarcely entered at all into the merits of the political question. It was not for a treacherous king or an intolerant church that they fought, but for the old banner which had waved in so many battles over the heads of their fathers, and for the altars at which they had received the hands of their brides. Though nothing could be more erroneous than their political opinions, they possessed, in a far greater degree than their adversaries, those qualities which are the grace of private life. With many of the vices of the Round Table, they had also many of its virtues, — courtesy, generosity, veracity, tender-

ness, and respect for women. They had far more both of profound and of polite learning than the Puritans. Their manners were more engaging, their tempers more amiable, their tastes more elegant, and their households more cheerful.

86. Milton did not strictly belong to any of the classes which we have described. He was not a Puritan. He was not a free-thinker. He was not a Royalist. In his character the noblest qualities of every party were combined in harmonious union. From the Parliament and from the Court, from the conventicle and from the Gothic cloister, from the gloomy and sepulchral circles of the Roundheads, and from the Christmas revel of the hospitable Cavalier, his nature selected and drew to itself whatever was great and good, while it rejected all the base and pernicious ingredients by which those finer elements were defiled. Like the Puritans, he lived

"As ever in his great task-master's eye."

Like them, he kept his mind continually fixed on an Almighty Judge and an eternal reward. And hence he acquired their contempt of external cir-

cumstances, their fortitude, their tranquillity, their inflexible resolution. But not the coolest sceptic or the most profane scoffer was more perfectly free from the contagion of their frantic delusions, their savage manners, their ludicrous jargon, their scorn of science, and their aversion to pleasure. Hating tyranny with a perfect hatred, he had neverthelesss all the estimable and ornamental qualities which were almost entirely monopolized by the party of the tyrant. There was none who had a stronger sense of the value of literature, a finer relish for every elegant amusement, or a more chivalrous delicacy of honor and love. Though his opinions were democratic, his tastes and his associations were such as harmonize best with monarchy and aristocracy. He was under the influence of all the feelings by which the gallant Cavaliers were misled. But of those feelings he was the master and not the slave. Like the hero of Homer, he enjoyed all the pleasures of fascination; but he was not fascinated. He listened to the song of the Sirens; yet he glided by without being seduced to their fatal shore. He tasted the cup of Circe; but he bore about him a sure anti-

dote against the effects of its bewitching sweetness. The illusions which captivated his imagination never impaired his reasoning powers. The statesman was proof against the splendor, the solemnity, and the romance which enchanted the poet. Any person who will contrast the sentiments expressed in his treatises on Prelacy with the exquisite lines on ecclesiastical architecture and music in the Penseroso, which was published about the same time, will understand our meaning. This is an inconsistency which, more than anything else, raises his character in our estimation, because it shows how many private tastes and feelings he sacrificed, in order to do what he considered his duty to mankind. It is the very struggle of the noble Othello. His heart relents; but his hand is firm. He does naught in hate, but all in honor. He kisses the beautiful deceiver before he destroys her.

87. That from which the public character of Milton derives its great and peculiar splendor, still remains to be mentioned. If he exerted himself to overthrow a forsworn king and a persecuting hierarchy, he exerted himself in conjunction with

others. But the glory of the battle which he fought for the species of freedom which is the most valuable, and which was then the least understood, the freedom of the human mind, is all his own. Thousands and tens of thousands among his contemporaries raised their voices against ship-money and the Star Chamber. But there were few indeed who discerned the more fearful evils of moral and intellectual slavery, and the benefits which would result from the liberty of the press and the unfettered exercise of private judgment. These were the objects which Milton justly conceived to be the most important. He was desirous that the people should think for themselves as well as tax themselves, and should be emancipated from the dominion of prejudice as well as from that of Charles. He knew that those who, with the best intentions, overlooked these schemes of reform, and contented themselves with pulling down the King and imprisoning the malignants, acted like the heedless brothers in his own poem, who, in their eagerness to disperse the train of the sorcerer, neglected the means of liberating the captive. They thought only of conquering when they should have thought of disenchanting.

"Oh, ye mistook! Ye should have snatched his wand
And bound him fast. Without the rod reversed,
And backward mutters of dissevering power,
We cannot free the lady that sits here
Bound in strong fetters fixed and motionless."

88. To reverse the rod, to spell the charm backward, to break the ties which bound a stupefied people to the seat of enchantment, was the noble aim of Milton. To this all his public conduct was directed. For this he joined the Presbyterians; for this he forsook them. He fought their perilous battle; but he turned away with disdain from their insolent triumph. He saw that they, like those whom they had vanquished, were hostile to the liberty of thought. He therefore joined the Independents, and called upon Cromwell to break the secular chain, and to save free conscience from the paw of the Presbyterian wolf. With a view to the same great object, he attacked the licensing system, in that sublime treatise which every statesman should wear as a sign upon his hand and as frontlets between his eyes. His attacks were, in general, directed less against particular abuses than against those deeply seated errors on which almost all abuses are founded, the servile worship

of eminent men and the irrational dread of innovation.

89. That he might shake the foundations of these debasing sentiments more effectually, he always selected for himself the boldest literary services. He never came up in the rear, when the outworks had been carried and the breach entered. He pressed into the forlorn hope. At the beginning of the changes, he wrote with incomparable energy and eloquence against the bishops. But, when his opinion seemed likely to prevail, he passed on to other subjects, and abandoned prelacy to the crowd of writers who now hastened to insult a falling party. There is no more hazardous enterprise than that of bearing the torch of truth into those dark and infected recesses in which no light has ever shone. But it was the choice and the pleasure of Milton to penetrate the noisome vapors, and to brave the terrible explosion. Those who most disapprove of his opinions must respect the hardihood with which he maintained them. He, in general, left to others the credit of expounding and defending the popular parts of his religious and political creed. He took his own stand upon

those which the great body of his countrymen reprobated as criminal, or derided as paradoxical. He stood up for divorce and regicide. He attacked the prevailing systems of education. His radiant and beneficent career resembled that of the god of light and fertility: —

> "Nitor in adversum; nec me, qui cætera, vincit
> Impetus, et rapido contrarius evehor orbi."

90. It is to be regretted that the prose writings of Milton should, in our time, be so little read. As compositions, they deserve the attention of every man who wishes to become acquainted with the full power of the English language. They abound with passages compared with which the finest declamations of Burke sink into insignificance. They are a perfect field of cloth of gold. The style is stiff with gorgeous embroidery. Not even in the earlier books of the Paradise Lost has the great poet ever risen higher than in those parts of his controversial works in which his feelings, excited by conflict, find a vent in bursts of devotional and lyric rapture. It is, to borrow his own majestic language, "a sevenfold chorus of hallelujahs and harping symphonies."

91. We had intended to look more closely at these performances, to analyze the peculiarities of the diction, to dwell at some length on the sublime wisdom of the Areopagitica and the nervous rhetoric of the Iconoclast, and to point out some of those magnificent passages which occur in the Treatise of Reformation, and the Animadversions on the Remonstrant. But the length to which our remarks have already extended renders this impossible.

92. We must conclude. And yet we can scarcely tear ourselves away from the subject. The days immediately following the publication of this relic of Milton appear to be peculiarly set apart, and consecrated to his memory. And we shall scarcely be censured if, on this his festival, we be found lingering near his shrine, how worthless soever may be the offering which we bring to it. While this book lies on our table, we seem to be contemporaries of the writer. We are transported a hundred and fifty years back. We can almost fancy that we are visiting him in his small lodging; that we see him sitting at the old organ beneath the faded green hangings; that we can

catch the quick twinkle of his eyes, rolling in vain to find the day; that we are reading in the lines of his noble countenance the proud and mournful history of his glory and his affliction. We image to ourselves the breathless silence in which we should listen to his slightest word; the passionate veneration with which we should kneel to kiss his hand and weep upon it; the earnestness with which we should endeavor to console him, if indeed such a spirit could need consolation, for the neglect of an age unworthy of his talents and his virtues; the eagerness with which we should contest with his daughters, or with his Quaker friend Elwood, the privilege of reading Homer to him, or of taking down the immortal accents which flowed from his lips.

93. These are perhaps foolish feelings. Yet we cannot be ashamed of them; nor shall we be sorry if what we have written shall in any degree excite them in other minds. We are not much in the habit of idolizing either the living or the dead. And we think that there is no more certain indication of a weak and ill-regulated intellect than that propensity which, for want of a better

name, we will venture to christen Boswellism. But there are a few characters which have stood the closest scrutiny and the severest tests, which have been tried in the furnace and have proved pure, which have been weighed in the balance and have not been found wanting, which have been declared sterling by the general consent of mankind, and which are visibly stamped with the image and superscription of the Most High. These great men we trust that we know how to prize; and of these was Milton. The sight of his books, the sound of his name, are pleasant to us. His thoughts resemble those celestial fruits and flowers which the Virgin Martyr of Massinger sent down from the gardens of Paradise to the earth, and which were distinguished from the productions of other soils, not only by superior bloom aud sweetness, but by miraculous efficacy to invigorate and to heal. They are powerful, not only to delight, but to elevate and purify. Nor do we envy the man who can study either the life or the writings of the great poet and patriot, without aspiring to emulate, not indeed the sublime works with which his genius has enriched

our literature, but the zeal with which he labored for the public good, the fortitude with which he endured every private calamity, the lofty disdain with which he looked down on temptations and dangers, the deadly hatred which he bore to bigots and tyrants, and the faith which he so sternly kept with his country and with his fame.

THE LIFE AND WRITINGS OF ADDISON.

The Life of Joseph Addison. By Lucy Aikin. 2 vols., 8 vo. London: 1843.

1. Some reviewers are of opinion that a lady who dares to publish a book renounces by that act the franchises appertaining to her sex, and can claim no exemption from the utmost rigor of critical procedure. From that opinion we dissent. We admit, indeed, that in a country which boasts of many female writers, eminently qualified by their talents and acquirements to influence the public mind, it would be of most pernicious consequence that inaccurate history or unsound philosophy should be suffered to pass uncensured, merely because the offender chanced to be a lady. But we conceive that, on such occasions, a critic would do well to imitate the courteous knight who found himself compelled by duty to keep the lists against Bradamante. He, we are told, defended

successfully the cause of which he was the champion; but before the fight began, exchanged Balisarda for a less deadly sword, of which he carefully blunted the point and edge.[1]

2. Nor are the immunities of sex the only immunities which Miss Aikin may rightfully plead. Several of her works, and especially the very pleasing Memoires of the Reign of James the First, have fully entitled her to the privileges enjoyed by good writers. One of those privileges we hold to be this, that such writers, when, either from the unlucky choice of a subject, or from the indolence too often produced by success, they happen to fail, shall not be subjected to the severe discipline which it is sometimes necessary to inflict upon dunces and impostors, but shall merely be reminded by a gentle touch, like that with which the Laputan flapper roused his dreaming lord, that it is high time to wake.

3. Our readers will probably infer from what we have said that Miss Aikin's book has disappointed us. The truth is, that she is not well acquainted with her subject. No person who is not familiar

[1] Orlando Furioso, xlv. 68.

with the political and literary history of England during the reigns of William the Third, of Anne, and of George the First, can possibly write a good life of Addison. Now, we mean no reproach to Miss Aikin, and many will think that we pay her a compliment, when we say that her studies have taken a different direction. She is better acquainted with Shakespeare and Raleigh, than with Congreve and Prior; and is far more at home among the ruffs and peaked beards of Theobald's than among the Steenkirks and flowing periwigs which surrounded Queen Anne's tea-table at Hampton. She seems to have written about the Elizabethan age, because she had read much about it; she seems, on the other hand, to have read a little about the age of Addison, because she had determined to write about it. The consequence is that she has had to describe men and things without having either a correct or a vivid idea of them, and that she has often fallen into errors of a very serious kind. The reputation which Miss Aikin has justly earned stands so high, and the charm of Addison's letters is so great, that a second edition of this work may probably be required. If so, we

hope that every paragraph will be revised, and that every date and fact about which there can be the smallest doubt will be carefully verified.

4. To Addison himself we are bound by a sentiment as much like affection as any sentiment can be, which is inspired by one who has been sleeping a hundred and twenty years in Westminster Abbey. We trust, however, that this feeling will not betray us into that abject idolatry which we have often had occasion to reprehend in others, and which seldom fails to make both the idolater and the idol ridiculous. A man of genius and virtue is but a man. All his powers cannot be equally developed; nor can we expect from him perfect self-knowledge. We need not, therefore, hesitate to admit that Addison has left us some compositions which do not rise above mediocrity, some heroic poems hardly equal to Parnell's, some criticism as superficial as Dr. Blair's, and a tragedy not very much better than Dr. Johnson's. It is praise enough to say of a writer that, in a high department of literature, in which many eminent writers have distinguished themselves, he has had no equal; and this may with strict justice be said of Addison.

5. As a man, he may not have deserved the adoration which he received from those who, bewitched by his fascinating society, and indebted for all the comforts of life to his generous and delicate friendship, worshipped him nightly in his favorite temple at Button's. But, after full inquiry and impartial reflection, we have long been convinced that he deserved as much love and esteem as can be justly claimed by any of our infirm and erring race. Some blemishes may undoubtedly be detected in his character; but the more carefully it is examined, the more it will appear, to use the phrase of the old anatomists, sound in the noble parts, free from all taint of perfidy, of cowardice, of cruelty, of ingratitude, of envy. Men may easily be named in whom some particular good disposition has been more conspicuous than in Addison. But the just harmony of qualities, the exact temper between the stern and the humane virtues, the habitual observance of every law, not only of moral rectitude, but of moral grace and dignity, distinguish him from all men who have been tried by equally strong temptations, and about whose conduct we possess equally full information.

6. His father was the Reverened Lancelot Addison, who, though eclipsed by his more celebrated son, made some figure in the world, and occupies with credit two folio pages in the *Biographia Britannica*. Lancelot was sent up as a poor scholar from Westmoreland to Queen's College, Oxford, in the time of the Commonwealth; made some progress in learning; became, like most of his fellow-students, a violent Royalist; lampooned the heads of the university, and was forced to ask pardon on his bended knees. When he had left college he earned a humble subsistence by reading the liturgy of the fallen church to the families of those sturdy squires whose manor-houses were scattered over the Wild of Sussex. After the Restoration his loyalty was rewarded with the post of chaplain to the garrison of Dunkirk. When Dunkirk was sold to France he lost his employment. But Tangier had been ceded by Portugal to England as part of the marriage portion of the Infanta Catharine; and to Tangier Lancelot Addison was sent. A more miserable situation can hardly be conceived. It was difficult to say whether the unfortunate settlers were

more tormented by the heats or by the rains, by the soldiers within the wall or by the Moors without it. One advantage the chaplain had. He enjoyed an excellent opportunity of studying the history and manners of Jews and Mahometans; and of this opportunity he appears to have made excellent use. On his return to England, after some years of banishment, he published an interesting volume on the Polity and Religion of Barbary, and another on the Hebrew Customs and the State of Rabbinical Learning. He rose to eminence in his profession, and became one of the royal chaplains, a Doctor of Divinity, Archdeacon of Salisbury, and Dean of Lichfield. It is said that he would have been made a bishop after the Revolution if he had not given offence to the government by strenuously opposing, in the Convocation of 1689, the liberal policy of William and Tillotson.

7. In 1672, not long after Dr. Addison's return from Tangier, his son Joseph was born. Of Joseph's childhood we know little. He learned his rudiments at school in his father's neighborhood, and was then sent to the Charter House.

The anecdotes which are popularly related about his boyish tricks do not harmonize very well with what we know of his riper years. There remains a tradition that he was the ringleader in a barring out, and another tradition that he ran away from school and hid himself in a wood, where he fed on berries and slept in a hollow tree, till after a long search he was discovered and brought home. If these stories be true, it would be curious to know by what moral discipline so mutinous and enterprising a lad was transformed into the gentlest and most modest of men.

8. We have abundant proof that, whatever Joseph's pranks may have been, he pursued his studies vigorously and successfully. At fifteen he was not only fit for the university, but carried thither a classical taste and a stock of learning which would have done honor to a Master of Arts. He was entered at Queen's College, Oxford; but he had not been many months there when some of his Latin verses fell by accident into the hands of Dr. Lancaster, Dean of Magdalene College. The young scholar's diction and versification were already such as veteran professors might envy.

Dr. Lancaster was desirous to serve a boy of such promise; nor was an opportunity long wanting. The Revolution had just taken place; and nowhere had it been hailed with more delight than at Magdalene College. That great and opulent corporation had been treated by James and by his chancellor with an insolence and injustice which, even in such a prince and in such a minister, may justly excite amazement, and which had done more than even the prosecution of the bishops to alienate the Church of England from the throne. A president, duly elected, had been violently expelled from his dwelling: a Papist had been set over the society by a royal mandate: the Fellows, who, in conformity with their oaths, had refused to submit to this usurper, had been driven forth from their quiet cloisters and gardens, to die of want or to live on charity. But the day of redress and retribution speedily came. The intruders were ejected: the venerable House was again inhabited by its old inmates: learning flourished under the rule of the wise and virtuous Hough; and with learning was united a mild and liberal spirit too often wanting in the princely colleges of

Oxford. In consequence of the troubles through which the society had passed, there had been no valid election of new members during the year 1688. In 1689, therefore, there was twice the ordinary number of vacancies; and thus Dr. Lancaster found it easy to procure for his young friend admittance to the advantages of a foundation then generally esteemed the wealthiest in Europe.

9. At Magdalene Addison resided during ten years. He was at first one of those scholars who are called Demies, but was subsequently elected a fellow. His college is still proud of his name; his portrait still hangs in the hall; and strangers are still told that his favorite walk was under the elms which fringe the meadow on the banks of the Cherwell. It is said, and is highly probable, that he was distinguished among his fellow-students by the delicacy of his feelings, by the shyness of his manners, and by the assiduity with which he often prolonged his studies far into the night. It is certain that his reputation for ability and learning stood high. Many years later the ancient doctors of Magdalene continued to talk in

their common room of his boyish compositions, and expressed their sorrow that no copy of exercises so remarkable had been preserved.

10. It is proper, however, to remark that Miss Aikin has committed the error, very pardonable in a lady, of overrating Addison's classical attainments. In one department of learning, indeed, his proficiency was such as it is hardly possible to overrate. His knowledge of the Latin poets, from Lucretius and Catullus down to Claudian and Prudentius, was singularly exact and profound. He understood them thoroughly, entered into their spirit, and had the finest and most discriminating perception of all their peculiarities of style and melody; nay, he copied their manner with admirable skill, and surpassed, we think, all their British imitators who had preceded him, Buchanan and Milton alone excepted. This is high praise; and beyond this we cannot with justice go. It is clear that Addison's serious attention during his residence at the university was almost entirely concentrated on Latin poetry, and that, if he did not wholly neglect other provinces of ancient literature, he vouchsafed to them only a cursory

glance. He does not appear to have attained more than an ordinary acquaintance with the political and moral writers of Rome; nor was his own Latin prose by any means equal to his Latin verse. His knowledge of Greek, though doubtless such as was in his time thought respectable at Oxford, was evidently less than that which many lads now carry away every year from Eton and Rugby. A minute examination of his works, if we had time to make such an examination, would fully bear out these remarks. We will briefly advert to a few of the facts on which our judgment is grounded.

11. Great praise is due to the Notes which Addison appended to his version of the second and third books of the Metamorphoses. Yet those notes, while they show him to have been, in his own domain, an accomplished scholar, show also how confined that domain was. They are rich in apposite references to Virgil, Statius, and Claudian; but they contain not a single illustration drawn from the Greek poets. Now, if in the whole compass of Latin literature there be a passage which stands in need of illustration drawn

from the Greek poets, it is the story of Pentheus in the third book of the Metamorphoses. Ovid was indebted for that story to Euripides and Theocritus, both of whom he has sometimes followed minutely. But neither to Euripides nor to Theocritus does Addison make the faintest allusion; and we, therefore, believe that we do not wrong him by supposing that he had little or no knowledge of their works.

12. His travels in Italy, again, abound with classical quotations, happily introduced; but scarcely one of those quotations is in prose. He draws more illustrations from Ausonius and Manilius than from Cicero. Even his notions of the political and military affairs of the Romans seem to be derived from poets and poetasters. Spots made memorable by events which have changed the destinies of the world, and which have been worthily recorded by great historians, bring to his mind only scraps of some ancient versifier. In the gorge of the Apennines he naturally remembers the hardships which Hannibal's army endured, and proceeds to cite, not the authentic narrative of Polybius, not the picturesque narra-

tive of Livy, but the languid hexameters of Silius Italicus. On the banks of the Rubicon he never thinks of Plutarch's lively description, or of the stern conciseness of the Commentaries, or of those letters to Atticus which so forcibly express the alternations of hope and fear in a sensitive mind at a great crisis. His only authority for the events of the civil war is Lucan.

13. All the best ancient works of art at Rome and Florence are Greek. Addison saw them, however, without recalling one single verse of Pindar, of Callimachus, or of the Attic dramatists; but they brought to his recollection innumerable passages of Horace, Juvenal, Statius, and Ovid.

14. The same may be said of the Treatise on Medals. In that pleasing work we find about three hundred passages extracted with great judgment from the Roman poets; but we do not recollect a single passage taken from any Roman orator or historian; and we are confident that not a line is quoted from any Greek writer. No person, who had derived all his information on the subject of medals from Addison, would sus-

pect that the Greek coins were in historical interest equal, and in beauty of execution far superior, to those of Rome.

15. If it were necessary to find any further proof that Addison's classical knowledge was confined within narrow limits, that proof would be furnished by his Essay on the Evidences of Christianity. The Roman poets throw little or no light on the literary and historical questions which he is under the necessity of examining in that essay. He is, therefore, left completely in the dark; and it is melancholy to see how helplessly he gropes his way from blunder to blunder. He assigns, as grounds for his religious belief, stories as absurd as that of the Cock-Lane ghost, and forgeries as rank as Ireland's Vortigern; puts faith in the lie about the Thundering Legion; is convinced that Tiberius moved the senate to admit Jesus among the gods; and pronounces the letter of Agbarus, King of Edessa, to be a record of great authority. Nor were these errors the effects of superstition; for to superstition Addison was by no means prone. The truth is, that he was writing about what he did not understand.

16. Miss Aikin has discovered a letter from which it appears that, while Addison resided at Oxford, he was one of several writers whom the booksellers engaged to make an English version of Herodotus; and she infers that he must have been a good Greek scholar. We can allow very little weight to this argument, when we consider that his fellow-laborers were to have been Boyle and Blackmore. Boyle is remembered chiefly as the nominal author of the worst book on Greek history and philology that ever was printed; and this book, bad as it is, Boyle was unable to produce without help. Of Blackmore's attainments in the ancient tongues, it may be sufficient to say that, in his prose, he has confounded an aphorism with an apophthegm, and that when, in his verse, he treats of classical subjects, his habit is to regale his readers with four false quantities to a page.

17. It is probable that the classical acquirements of Addison were of as much service to him as if they had been more extensive. The world generally gives its admiration, not to the man who does what nobody else even attempts to do, but to the man who does best what multitudes do well.

Bentley was so immeasurely superior to all the other scholars of his time that few among them could discover his superiority. But the accomplishment in which Addison excelled his contemporaries was then, as it is now, highly valued and assiduously cultivated at all English seats of learning. Everybody who had been at a public school had written Latin verses; many had written such verses with tolerable success, and were quite able to appreciate, though by no means able to rival, the skill with which Addison imitated Virgil. His lines on the Barometer and the Bowling Green were applauded by hundreds, to whom the Dissertation on the Epistles of Phalaris was as unintelligible as the hieroglyphics on an obelisk.

18. Purity of style, and an easy flow of numbers, are common to all Addison's Latin poems. Our favorite piece is the Battle of the Cranes and Pygmies; for in that piece we discern a gleam of the fancy and humor which many years later enlivened thousands of breakfast-tables. Swift boasted that he was never known to steal a hint; and he certainly owed as little to his predecessors as any modern writer. Yet we cannot help sus-

pecting that he borrowed, perhaps unconsciously, one of the happiest touches in his Voyage of Lilliput from Addison's verses. Let our readers judge.

19. "The Emperor," says Gulliver, "is taller by about the breadth of my nail than any of his court, which alone is enough to strike an awe into the beholders."

20. About thirty years before Gulliver's Travels appeared, Addison wrote these lines: —

> "Jamque acies inter medias sese arduus infert
> Pygmeadum ductor, qui, majestate verendus,
> Incessuque gravis, reliquos supereminet omnes
> Mole gigantea, mediamque exsurgit in ulnam."

21. The Latin poems of Addison were greatly and justly admired both at Oxford and Cambridge, before his name had ever been heard by the wits who thronged the coffee-houses round Drury-Lane Theatre. In his twenty-second year he ventured to appear before the public as a writer of English verse. He addressed some complimentary lines to Dryden, who, after many triumphs and many reverses, had at length reached a secure and lonely eminence among the literary men of that age.

Dryden appears to have been much gratified by the young scholar's praise; and an interchange of civilities and good offices followed. Addison was probably introduced by Dryden to Congreve, and was certainly presented by Congreve to Charles Montague, who was then Chancellor of the Exchequer, and leader of the Whig party in the House of Commons.

22. At this time Addison seemed inclined to devote himself to poetry. He published a translation of part of the fourth Georgic, Lines to King William, and other performances of equal value; that is to say, of no value at all. But in those days, the public was in the habit of receiving with applause pieces which would now have little chance of obtaining the Newdigate prize or the Seatonian prize. And the reason is obvious. The heroic couplet was then the favorite measure. The art of arranging words in that measure, so that the lines may flow smoothly, that the accents may fall correctly, that the rhymes may strike the ear strongly, and that there may be a pause at the end of every distich, is an art as mechanical as that of mending a kettle or shoeing a horse, and

may be learned by any human being who has sense enough to learn anything. But, like other mechanical arts, it was gradually improved by means of many experiments and many failures. It was reserved for Pope to discover the trick, to make himself complete master of it, and to teach it to everybody else. From the time when his Pastorals appeared, heroic versification became matter of rule and compass; and, before long, all artists were on a level. Hundreds of dunces who never blundered on one happy thought or expression were able to write reams of couplets which, as far as euphony was concerned, could not be distinguished from those of Pope himself, and which very clever writers of the reign of Charles the Second, — Rochester, for example, or Marvel, or Oldham, — would have contemplated with admiring despair.

23. Ben Jonson was a great man, Hoole a very small man. But Hoole, coming after Pope, had learned how to manufacture decasyllable verses, and poured them forth by thousands and tens of thousands, all as well turned, as smooth, and as like each other as the blocks which have passed

through Mr. Brunel's mill in the dockyard at Portsmouth. Ben's heroic couplets resemble blocks rudely hewn out by an unpractised hand with a blunt hatchet. Take as a specimen his translation of a celebrated passage in the Æneid: —

"This child our parent earth, stirred up with spite
Of all the gods, brought forth, and, as some write,
She was last sister of that giant race
That sought to scale Jove's court, right swift of pace,
And swifter far of wing, a monster vast
And dreadful. Look, how many plumes are placed
On her huge corpse, so many waking eyes
Stick underneath, and, which may stranger rise
In the report, as many tongues she wears."

24. Compare with these jagged misshapen distichs the neat fabric which Hoole's machine produces in unlimited abundance. We take the first lines on which we open in his version of Tasso. They are neither better nor worse than the rest: —

"O thou, whoe'er thou art, whose steps are led,
By choice or fate, these lonely shores to tread,
No greater wonders east or west can boast
Than yon small island on the pleasing coast.
If e'er thy sight would blissful scenes explore,
The current pass, and seek the further shore."

25. Ever since the time of Pope there has been a glut of lines of this sort; and we are now as little disposed to admire a man for being able to write them, as for being able to write his name. But in the days of William the Third such versification was rare; and a rhymer who had any skill in it passed for a great poet, just as in the dark ages a person who could write his name passed for a great clerk. Accordingly, Duke, Stepney, Granville, Walsh, and others whose only title to fame was that they said in tolerable metre what might have been as well said in prose, or what was not worth saying at all, were honored with marks of distinction which ought to be reserved for genius. With these Addison must have ranked, if he had not earned true and lasting glory by performances which very little resembled his juvenile poems.

26. Dryden was now busied with Virgil, and obtained from Addison a critical preface to the Georgics. In return for this service, and for other services of the same kind, the veteran poet, in the postscript to the translation of the Æneid, complimented his young friend with great liberality, and indeed with more liberality than sin-

cerity. He affected to be afraid that his own performance would not sustain a comparison with the version of the fourth Georgic, by "the most ingenious Mr. Addison of Oxford." "After his bees," added Dryden, "my latter swarm is scarcely worth the hiving."

27. The time had now arrived when it was necessary for Addison to choose a calling. Everything seemed to point his course towards the clerical profession. His habits were regular, his opinions orthodox. His college had large ecclesiastical preferment in its gift, and boasts that it has given at least one bishop to almost every see in England. Dr. Lancelot Addison held an honorable place in the church, and had set his heart on seeing his son a clergyman. It is clear, from some expressions in the young man's rhymes, that his intention was to take orders. But Charles Montague interfered. Montague had first brought himself into notice by verses, well-timed and not contemptibly written, but never, we think, rising above mediocrity. Fortunately for himself and for his country, he early quitted poetry, in which he could never have attained a rank as high as

that of Dorset or Rochester, and turned his mind to official and parliamentary business. It is written that the ingenious person who undertook to instruct Rasselas, prince of Abyssinia, in the art of flying, ascended an eminence, waved his wings, sprang into the air, and instantly dropped into the lake. But it is added that the wings, which were unable to support him through the sky, bore him up effectually as soon as he was in the water. This is no bad type of the fate of Charles Montague, and of men like him. When he attempted to soar into the regions of poetical invention, he altogether failed; but, as soon as he had descended from that ethereal elevation into a lower and grosser element, his talents instantly raised him above the mass. He became a distinguished financier, debater, courtier, and party leader. He still retained his fondness for the pursuits of his early days; but he showed that fondness not by wearying the public with his own feeble performances, but by discovering and encouraging literary excellence in others. A crowd of wits and poets, who would easily have vanquished him as a competitor, revered him as a

judge and a patron. In his plans for the encouragement of learning, he was cordially supported by the ablest and most virtuous of his colleagues, the Lord Chancellor Somers. Though both these great statesmen had a sincere love of letters, it was not solely from a love of letters that they were desirous to enlist youths of high intellectual qualifications in the public service. The Revolution had altered the whole system of government. Before that event the press had been controlled by censors, and the parliament had sat only two months in eight years. Now the press was free, and had begun to exercise unprecedented influence on the public mind. Parliament met annually, and sat long. The chief power in the state had passed to the House of Commons. At such a conjuncture, it was natural that literary and oratorical talents should rise in value. There was danger that a government which neglected such talents might be subverted by them. It was, therefore, a profound and enlightened policy which led Montague and Somers to attach such talents to the Whig party, by the strongest ties both of interest and of gratitude.

28. It is remarkable that, in a neighboring country, we have recently seen similar effects follow from similar causes. The Revolution of July 1830 established representative government in France. The men of letters instantly rose to the highest importance in the state. At the present moment most of the persons whom we see at the head both of the Administration and of the Opposition, have been professors, historians, journalists, poets. The influence of the literary class in England, during the generation which followed the Revolution, was great, but by no means so great as it has lately been in France. For, in England, the aristocracy of intellect had to contend with a powerful and deeply rooted aristocracy of a very different kind. France had no Somersets and Shrewsburys to keep down her Addisons and Priors.

29. It was in the year 1699, when Addison had just completed his twenty-seventh year, that the course of his life was finally determined. Both the great chiefs of the Ministry were kindly disposed towards him. In political opinions he already was, what he continued to be through life,

a firm, though a moderate Whig. He had addressed the most polished and vigorous of his early English lines to Somers, and had dedicated to Montague a Latin poem, truly Virgilian, both in style and rhythm, on the peace of Ryswick. The wish of the young poet's great friends was, it should seem, to employ him in the service of the crown abroad. But an intimate knowledge of the French language was a qualification indispensable to a diplomatist; and this qualification Addison had not acquired. It was, therefore, thought desirable that he should pass some time on the Continent in preparing himself for official employment. His own means were not such as would enable him to travel; but a pension of three hundred pounds a year was procured for him by the interest of the Lord Chancellor. It seems to have been apprehended that some difficulty might be started by the rulers of Magdalene College. But the Chancellor of the Exchequer wrote in the strongest terms to Hough. The state — such was the purport of Montague's letter — could not, at that time, spare to the church such a man as Addison. Too many high civil posts were already

occupied by adventurers, who, destitute of every liberal art and sentiment, at once pillaged and disgraced the country which they pretended to serve. It had become necessary to recruit for the public service from a very different class, from that class of which Addison was the representative. The close of the Minister's letter was remarkable. "I am called," he said, "an enemy of the church. But I will never do it any other injury than keeping Mr. Addison out of it."

30. This interference was successful; and, in the summer of 1699, Addison, made a rich man by his pension, and still retaining his fellowship, quitted his beloved Oxford, and set out on his travels. He crossed from Dover to Calais, proceeded to Paris, and was received there with great kindness and politeness by a kinsman of his friend Montague, Charles Earl of Manchester, who had just been appointed Ambassador to the Court of France. The Countess, a Whig and a toast, was probably as gracious as her lord; for Addison long retained an agreeable recollection of the impression which she at this time made on him, and, in some lively lines written on the glasses of the Kit Cat

Club, described the envy which her cheeks, glowing with the genuine bloom of England, had excited among the painted beauties of Versailles.

31. Louis the Fourteenth was at this time expiating the vices of his youth by a devotion which had no root in reason, and bore no fruit of charity. The servile literature of France had changed its character to suit the changed character of the prince. No book appeared that had not an air of sanctity. Racine, who was just dead, had passed the close of his life in writing sacred dramas; and Dacier was seeking for the Athanasian mysteries in Plato. Addison described this state of things in a short but lively and graceful letter to Montague. Another letter, written about the same time to the Lord Chancellor, conveyed the strongest assurances of gratitude and attachment. "The only return I can make to your Lordship," said Addison, "will be to apply myself entirely to my business." With this view he quitted Paris and repaired to Blois, a place where it was supposed that the French language was spoken in its highest purity, and where not a single Englishman could be found. Here he passed some months

pleasantly and profitably. Of his way of life at Blois, one of his associates, an abbé named Philippeaux, gave an account to Joseph Spence. If this account is to be trusted, Addison studied much, mused much, talked little, had fits of absence, and either had no love affairs, or was too discreet to confide them to the abbé. A man who, even when surrounded by fellow-countrymen and fellow-students, had always been remarkably shy and silent, was not likely to be loquacious in a foreign tongue, and among foreign companions. But it is clear from Addison's letters, some of which were long after published in the *Guardian*, that, while he appeared to be absorbed in his own meditations, he was really observing French society with that keen and sly, yet not ill-natured side-glance, which was peculiarly his own.

32. From Blois he returned to Paris; and, having now mastered the French language, found great pleasure in the society of French philosophers and poets. He gave an account in a letter to Bishop Hough, of two highly interesting conversations, one with Malebranche, the other with Boileau. Malebranche expressed great partiality

for the English, and extolled the genius of Newton, but shook his head when Hobbes was mentioned, and was indeed so unjust as to call the author of the Leviathan a poor silly creature. Addison's modesty restrained him from fully relating, in his letter, the circumstances of his introduction to Boileau. Boileau, having survived the friends and rivals of his youth, old, deaf, and melancholy, lived in retirement, seldom went either to Court or to the Academy, and was almost inaccessible to strangers. Of the English and of English literature he knew nothing. He had hardly heard the name of Dryden. Some of our countrymen, in the warmth of their patriotism, have asserted that this ignorance must have been affected. We own that we see no ground for such a supposition. English literature was to the French of the age of Louis the Fourteenth what German literature was to our own grandfathers. Very few, we suspect, of the accomplished men who, sixty or seventy years ago, used to dine in Leicester Square with Sir Joshua, or at Streatham with Mrs. Thrale, had the slightest notion that Wieland was one of the first wits and poets, and

Lessing, beyond all dispute, the first critic in Europe. Boileau knew just as little about the Paradise Lost and about Absalom and Achitophel; but he had read Addison's Latin poems, and admired them greatly. They had given him, he said, quite a new notion of the state of learning and taste among the English. Johnson will have it that these praises were insincere. "Nothing," says he, "is better known of Boileau than that he had an injudicious and peevish contempt of modern Latin; and therefore his profession of regard was probably the effect of his civility rather than approbation." Now, nothing is better known of Boileau than that he was singularly sparing of compliments. We do not remember that either friendship or fear ever induced him to bestow praise on any composition which he did not approve. On literary questions, his caustic, disdainful, and self-confident spirit rebelled against that authority to which everything else in France bowed down. He had the spirit to tell Louis the Fourteenth firmly and even rudely, that his majesty knew nothing about poetry, and admired verses which were detestable. What was there in

Addison's position that could induce the satirist, whose stern and fastidious temper had been the dread of two generations, to turn sycophant for the first and last time? Nor was Boileau's contempt of modern Latin either injudicious or peevish. He thought, indeed, that no poem of the first order would ever be written in a dead language. And did he think amiss? Has not the experience of centuries confirmed his opinion? Boileau also thought it probable that, in the best modern Latin, a writer of the Augustan age would have detected ludicrous improprieties. And who can think otherwise? What modern scholar can honestly declare that he sees the smallest impurity in the style of Livy? Yet is it not certain that, in the style of Livy, Pollio, whose taste had been formed on the banks of the Tiber, detected the inelegant idiom of the Po? Has any modern scholar understood Latin better than Frederic the Great understood French? Yet is it not notorious that Frederic the Great, after reading, speaking, writing French, and nothing but French, during more than half a century, after unlearning his mother tongue in order to learn French, after living

familiarly during many years with French associates, could not, to the last, compose in French, without imminent risk of committing some mistake which would have moved a smile in the literary circles of Paris? Do we believe that Erasmus and Fracastorius wrote Latin as well as Dr. Robertson and Sir Walter Scott wrote English? And are there not in the Dissertation on India, the last of Dr. Robertson's works, in Waverley, in Marmion, Scotticisms at which a London apprentice would laugh? But does it follow, because we think thus, that we can find nothing to admire in the noble alcaics of Gray, or in the playful elegiacs of Vincent Bourne? Surely not. Nor was Boileau so ignorant or tasteless as to be incapable of appreciating good modern Latin. In the very letter to which Johnson alludes, Boileau says, "Ne croyez pas pourtant que je veuille par là blâmer les vers Latins que vous m'avez envoyés d'un de vos illustres académiciens. Je les ai trouvés fort beaux, et dignes de Vida et de Sannazar, mais non pas d'Horace et de Virgile." Several poems in modern Latin have been praised by Boileau quite as liberally as it was his habit to

praise anything. He says, for example, of the Père Fraguier's epigrams, that Catullus seems to have come to life again. But the best proof that Boileau did not feel the undiscerning contempt for modern Latin verses which has been imputed to him, is that he wrote and published Latin verses in several metres. Indeed, it happens, curiously enough, that the most severe censure ever pronounced by him on modern Latin is conveyed in Latin hexameters. We allude to the fragment which begins: —

> "Quid numeris iterum me balbutire Latinis,
> Longe Alpes citra natum de patre Sicambro,
> Musa, jubes?"

33. For these reasons we feel assured that the praise which Boileau bestowed on the *Machinæ Gesticulantes*, and the *Gerano-Pygmæomachia*, was sincere. He certainly opened himself to Addison with a freedom which was a sure indication of esteem. Literature was the chief subject of conversation. The old man talked on his favorite theme much and well, — indeed, as his young hearer thought, incomparably well. Boileau had undoubtedly some of the qualities of a great critic.

He wanted imagination; but he had strong sense. His literary code was formed on narrow principles; but in applying it he showed great judgment and penetration. In mere style, abstracted from the ideas of which style is the garb, his taste was excellent. He was well acquainted with the great Greek writers, and, though unable fully to appreciate their creative genius, admired the majestic simplicity of their manner, and had learned from them to despise bombast and tinsel. It is easy, we think, to discover in the *Spectator* and the *Guardian* traces of the influence, in part salutary and in part pernicious, which the mind of Boileau had on the mind of Addison.

34. While Addison was at Paris, an event took place which made that capital a disagreeable residence for an Englishman and a Whig. Charles, second of the name, king of Spain, died, and bequeathed his dominions to Philip, Duke of Anjou, a younger son of the Dauphin. The King of France, in direct violation of his engagements, both with Great Britain and with the States, General, accepted the bequest on behalf of his grandson. The house of Bourbon was at the sum-

mit of human grandeur. England had been outwitted, and found herself in a situation at once degrading and perilous. The people of France, not presaging the calamities by which they were destined to expiate the perfidy of their sovereign, went mad with pride and delight. Every man looked as if a great estate had just been left him. "The French conversation," said Addison, "begins to grow insupportable; that which was before the vainest nation in the world, is now worse than ever." Sick of the arrogant exultation of the Parisians, and probably foreseeing that the peace between France and England could not be of long duration, he set off for Italy.

35. In December, 1700,[1] he embarked at Marseilles. As he glided along the Ligurian coast, he was delighted by the sight of myrtles and olive-trees, which retained their verdure under the winter solstice. Soon, however, he encountered one

[1] It is strange that Addison should in the first line of his travels have misdated his departure from Marseilles by a whole year, and still more strange that this slip of the pen, which throws the whole narrative into confusion, should have been repeated in a succession of editions, and never detected by Tickell or Hurd. (Macaulay's Note.)

of the black storms of the Mediterranean. The captain of the ship gave up all for lost, and confessed himself to a capuchin who happened to be on board. The English heretic, in the meantime, fortified himself against the terrors of death with devotions of a very different kind. How strong an impression this perilous voyage made on him appears from the ode, "How are thy servants blest, O Lord!" which was long after published in the *Spectator*. After some days of discomfort and danger, Addison was glad to land at Savona, and to make his way, over mountains where no road had yet been hewn out by art, to the city of Genoa.

36. At Genoa, still ruled by her own doge, and by the nobles whose names were inscribed on her Book of Gold, Addison made a short stay. He admired the narrow streets overhung by long lines of towering palaces, the walls rich with frescoes, the gorgeous temple of the Annunciation, and the tapestries whereon were recorded the long glories of the house of Doria. Thence he hastened to Milan, where he contemplated the Gothic magnificence of the cathedral with more wonder than

pleasure. He passed Lake Benacus while a gale was blowing, and saw the waves raging as they raged when Virgil looked upon them. At Venice, then the gayest spot in Europe, the traveller spent the Carnival, the gayest season of the year, in the midst of masks, dances, and serenades. Here he was at once diverted and provoked by the absurd dramatic pieces which then disgraced the Italian stage. To one of those pieces, however, he was indebted for a valuable hint. He was present when a ridiculous play on the death of Cato was performed. Cato, it seems, was in love with a daughter of Scipio. The lady had given her heart to Cæsar. The rejected lover determined to destroy himself. He appeared seated in his library, a dagger in his hand, a Plutarch and a Tasso before him; and, in this position, he pronounced a soliloquy before he struck the blow. We are surprised that so remarkable a circumstance as this should have escaped the notice of all Addison's biographers. There cannot, we conceive, be the smallest doubt that this scene, in spite of its absurdities and anachronisms, struck the traveller's imagination, and suggested to him the thought of bringing

Cato on the English stage. It is well known that about this time he began his tragedy, and that he finished the first four acts before he returned to England.

37. On his way from Venice to Rome, he was drawn some miles out of the beaten road by a wish to see the smallest independent state in Europe. On a rock where the snow still lay, though the Italian spring was now far advanced, was perched the little fortress of San Marino. The roads which led to the secluded town were so bad that few travellers had ever visited it, and none had ever published an account of it. Addison could not suppress a good-natured smile at the simple manners and institutions of this singular community. But he observed, with the exultation of a Whig, that the rude mountain tract which formed the territory of the republic swarmed with an honest, healthy, and contented peasantry, while the rich plain which surrounded the metropolis of civil and spiritual tyranny was scarcely less desolate than the uncleared wilds of America.

38. At Rome Addison remained on his first visit only long enough to catch a glimpse of St. Peter's

and of the Pantheon. His haste is the more extraordinary because the Holy Week was close at hand. He has given no hint which can enable us to pronounce why he chose to fly from a spectacle which every year allures from distant regions persons of far less taste and sensibility than his. Possibly, travelling, as he did, at the charge of a government distinguished by its enmity to the Church of Rome, he may have thought that it would be imprudent in him to assist at the most magnificent rite of that church. Many eyes would be upon him, and he might find it difficult to behave in such a manner as to give offence neither to his patrons in England, nor to those among whom he resided. Whatever his motives may have been, he turned his back on the most august and affecting ceremony which is known among men, and posted along the Appian way to Naples.

39. Naples was then destitute of what are now, perhaps, its chief attractions. The lovely bay and the awful mountain were indeed there; but a farm-house stood on the theatre of Herculaneum, and rows of vines grew over the streets of Pompeii. The temples of Pæstum had not indeed been

hidden from the eye of man by any great convulsion of nature; but, strange to say, their existence was a secret even to artists and antiquaries. Though situated within a few hours' journey of a great capital, where Salvator had not long before painted, and where Vico was then lecturing, those noble remains were as little known to Europe as the ruined cities overgrown by the forests of Yucatan. What was to be seen at Naples Addison saw. He climbed Vesuvius, explored the tunnel of Posilipo, and wandered among the vines and almond-trees of Capreæ. But neither the wonders of nature, nor those of art, could so occupy his attention as to prevent him from noticing, though cursorily, the abuses of the government and the misery of the people. The great kingdom which had just descended to Philip the Fifth, was in a state of paralytic dotage. Even Castile and Aragon were sunk in wretchedness. Yet, compared with the Italian dependencies of the Spanish crown, Castile and Aragon might be called prosperous. It is clear that all the observations which Addison made in Italy tended to confirm him in the political

opinions which he had adopted at home. To the last he always spoke of foreign travel as the best cure for Jacobitism. In his *Freeholder* the Tory fox-hunter asks what travelling is good for, except to teach a man to jabber French and to talk against passive obedience.

40. From Naples, Addison returned to Rome by sea, along the coast which his favorite Virgil had celebrated. The felucca passed the headland where the oar and trumpet were placed by the Trojan adventurers on the tomb of Misenus, and anchored at night under the shelter of the fabled promontory of Circe. The voyage ended in the Tiber, still overhung with dark verdure, and still turbid with yellow sand, as when it met the eyes of Æneas. From the ruined port of Ostia, the stranger hurrried to Rome; and at Rome he remained during those hot and sickly months, when, even in the Augustan age, all who could make their escape fled from mad dogs and from streets black with funerals, to gather the first figs of the season in the country. It is probable that, when he, long after, poured forth in verse his gratitude to the Providence which had en-

abled him to breathe unhurt in tainted air, he was thinking of the August and September which he passed at Rome.

41. It was not till the latter end of October that he tore himself away from the masterpieces of ancient and modern art which are collected in the city, so long the mistress of the world. He then journeyed northward, passed through Sienna, and for a moment forgot his prejudices in favor of classic architecture as he looked on the magnificent cathedral. At Florence he spent some days with the Duke of Shrewsbury, who, cloyed with the pleasures of ambition, and impatient of its pains, fearing both parties, and loving neither, had determined to hide in an Italian retreat talents and accomplishments which, if they had been united with fixed principles and civil courage, might have made him the foremost man of his age. These days, we are told, passed pleasantly; and we can easily believe it. For Addison was a delightful companion when he was at his ease; and the duke, though he seldom forgot that he was a Talbot, had the invaluable art of putting at ease all who came near him.

42. Addison gave some time to Florence, and especially to the sculptures in the Museum, which he preferred even to those of the Vatican. He then pursued his journey through a country in which the ravages of the last war were still discernible, and in which all men were looking forward with dread to a still fiercer conflict. Eugene had already descended from the Rhætian Alps, to dispute with Catinat, the rich plain of Lombardy. The faithless ruler of Savoy was still reckoned among the allies of Louis. England had not yet actually declared war against France: but Manchester had left Paris; and the negotiations which produced the Grand Alliance against the house of Bourbon were in progress. Under such circumstances, it was desirable for an English traveller to reach neutral ground without delay. Addison resolved to cross Mont Cenis. It was December; and the road was very different from that which now reminds the stranger of the power and genius of Napoleon. The winter, however, was mild; and the passage was, for those times, easy. To this journey Addison alluded, when in the ode which we have already quoted, he said that for

him the Divine goodness had warmed the hoary Alpine hills.

43. It was in the midst of the eternal snow that he composed his Epistle to his friend Montague, now Lord Halifax. That Epistle, once widely renowned, is now known only to curious readers, and will hardly be considered by those to whom it is known as in any perceptible degree heightening Addison's fame. It is, however, decidedly superior to any English composition which he had previously published. Nay, we think it quite as good as any poem in heroic metre which appeared during the interval between the death of Dryden and the publication of the Essay on Criticism. It contains passages as good as the second-rate passages of Pope, and would have added to the reputation of Parnell or Prior.

44. But, whatever be the literary merits or defects of the Epistle, it undoubtedly does honor to the principles and spirit of the author. Halifax had now nothing to give. He had fallen from power, had been held up to obloquy, had been impeached by the House of Commons, and, though his peers had dismissed the impeachment, had, as

it seemed, little chance of ever again filling high office. The Epistle, written at such a time, is one among many proofs that there was no mixture of cowardice or meanness in the suavity and moderation which distinguished Addison from all the other public men of those stormy times.

45. At Geneva, the traveller learned that a partial change of ministry had taken place in England, and that the Earl of Manchester had become Secretary of State. Manchester exerted himself to serve his young friend. It was thought advisable that an English agent should be near the person of Eugene in Italy; and Addison, whose diplomatic education was now finished, was the man selected. He was preparing to enter on his honorable functions, when all his prospects were for a time darkened by the death of William the Third.

46. Anne had long felt a strong aversion, personal, political, and religious, to the Whig party. That aversion appeared in the first measures of her reign. Manchester was deprived of the seals, after he had held them only a few weeks. Neither Somers nor Halifax was sworn of the Privy Coun-

cil. Addison shared the fate of his three patrons. His hopes of employment in the public service were at an end; his pension was stopped; and it was necessary for him to support himself by his own exertions. He became tutor to a young English traveller, and appears to have rambled with his pupil over a great part of Switzerland and Germany. At this time he wrote his pleasing treatise on Medals. It was not published till after his death; but several distinguished scholars saw the manuscript, and gave just praise to the grace of the style, and to the learning and ingenuity evinced by the quotations.

47. From Germany, Addison repaired to Holland, where he learned the melancholy news of his father's death. After passing some months in the United Provinces, he returned about the close of the year 1703 to England. He was there cordially received by his friends, and introduced by them into the Kit Cat Club, a society in which were collected all the various talents and accomplishments which then gave lustre to the Whig party.

48. Addison was, during some months after his

return from the Continent, hard pressed by pecuniary difficulties. But it was soon in the power of his noble patrons to serve him effectually. A political change, silent and gradual, but of the highest importance, was in daily progress. The accession of Anne had been hailed by the Tories with transports of joy and hope; and for a time it seemed that the Whigs had fallen never to rise again. The throne was surrounded by men supposed to be attached to the prerogative and to the church; and among these none stood so high in the favor of the sovereign as the Lord-Treasurer Godolphin and the Captain-General Marlborough.

49. The country gentlemen and country clergymen had fully expected that the policy of these ministers would be directly opposed to that which had been almost constantly followed by William; that the landed interest would be favored at the expense of trade; that no additions would be made to the funded debt; that the privileges conceded to Dissenters by the late king would be curtailed, if not withdrawn; that the war with France, if there must be such a war, would, on our part, be almost entirely naval; and that the

government would avoid close connections with foreign powers, and, above all, with Holland.

50. But the country gentlemen and country clergymen were fated to be deceived, not for the last time. The prejudices and passions which raged without control in vicarages, in cathedral closes, and in the manor-houses of fox-hunting squires, were not shared by the chiefs of the ministry. Those statesmen saw that it was both for the public interest, and for their own interest, to adopt a Whig policy, at least as respected the alliances of the country and the conduct of the war. But, if the foreign policy of the Whigs were adopted, it was impossible to abstain from adopting also their financial policy. The natural consequences followed. The rigid Tories were alienated from the government. The votes of the Whigs became necessary to it. The votes of the Whigs could be secured only by further concessions; and further concessions the Queen was induced to make.

51. At the beginning of the year 1704, the state of parties bore a close analogy to the state of parties in 1826. In 1826, as in 1704, there

was a Tory ministry divided into two hostile sections. The position of Mr. Canning and his friends in 1826 corresponded to that which Marlborough and Godolphin occupied in 1704. Nottingham and Jersey were in 1704 what Lord Eldon and Lord Westmoreland were in 1826. The Whigs of 1704 were in a situation resembling that in which the Whigs of 1826 stood. In 1704, Somers, Halifax, Sunderland, Cowper, were not in office. There was no avowed coalition between them and the moderate Tories. It is probable that no direct communication tending to such a coalition had yet taken place; yet all men saw that such a coalition was inevitable, nay, that it was already half formed. Such, or nearly such, was the state of things when tidings arrived of the great battle fought at Blenheim on the 13th August, 1704. By the Whigs the news was hailed with transports of joy and pride. No fault, no cause of quarrel, could be remembered by them against the commander whose genius had, in one day, changed the face of Europe, saved the Imperial throne, humbled the house of Bourbon, and secured the Act of Settlement against foreign

hostility. The feeling of the Tories was very different. They could not indeed, without imprudence, openly express regret at an event so glorious to their country; but their congratulations were so cold and sullen as to give deep disgust to the victorious general and his friends.

52. Godolphin was not a reading man. Whatever time he could spare from business he was in the habit of spending at Newmarket or at the card-table. But he was not absolutely indifferent to poetry; and he was too intelligent an observer not to perceive that literature was a formidable engine of political warfare, and that the great Whig leaders had strengthened their party and raised their character by extending a liberal and judicious patronage to good writers. He was mortified, and not without reason, by the exceeding badness of the poems which appeared in honor of the battle of Blenheim. One of those poems has been rescued from oblivion by the exquisite absurdity of three lines: —

> "Think of two thousand gentlemen at least,
> And each man mounted on his capering beast;
> Into the Danube they were pushed by shoals."

53. Where to procure better verses the treasurer did not know. He understood how to negotiate a loan, or remit a subsidy; he was also well versed in the history of running horses and fighting cocks; but his acquaintance among the poets was very small. He consulted Halifax; but Halifax affected to decline the office of adviser. He had, he said, done his best, when he had power, to encourage men whose abilities and acquirements might do honor to their country. Those times were over. Other maxims had prevailed. Merit was suffered to pine in obscurity; and the public money was squandered on the undeserving. "I do know," he added, "a gentleman who would celebrate the battle in a manner worthy of the subject, but I will not name him." Godolphin, who was an expert at the soft answer which turneth away wrath, and who was under the necessity of paying court to the Whigs, gently replied that there was too much ground for Halifax's complaints, but that what was amiss should in time be rectified, and that in the meantime the services of a man such as Halifax had described should be liberally rewarded. Halifax then men-

tioned Addison; but, mindful of the dignity as well as of the pecuniary interest of his friend, insisted that the minister should apply in the most courteous manner to Addison himself; and this Godolphin promised to do.

54. Addison then occupied a garret up three pair of stairs, over a small shop in the Haymarket. In this humble lodging he was surprised, on the morning which followed the conversation between Godolphin and Halifax, by a visit from no less a person than the Right Honorable Henry Boyle, then Chancellor of the Exchequer, and afterwards Lord Carleton. This high-born minister had been sent by the Lord-Treasurer as ambassador to the needy poet. Addison readily undertook the proposed task, a task which, to so good a Whig, was probably a pleasure. When the poem was little more than half finished, he showed it to Godolphin, who was delighted with it, and particularly with the famous similitude of the Angel. Addison was instantly appointed to a commissionership worth about two hundred pounds a year, and was assured that this appointment was only an earnest of greater favors.

55. The Campaign came forth, and was as much admired by the public as by the minister. It pleases us less on the whole than the Epistle to Halifax. Yet it undoubtedly ranks high among the poems which appeared during the interval between the death of Dryden and the dawn of Pope's genius. The chief merit of the Campaign, we think, is that which was noticed by Johnson, the manly and rational rejection of fiction. The first great poet whose works have come down to us sang of war long before war became a science or a trade. If, in his time, there was enmity between two little Greek towns, each poured forth its crowd of citizens, ignorant of discipline, and armed with implements of labor rudely turned into weapons. On each side appeared conspicuous a few chiefs, whose wealth had enabled them to procure good armor, horses, and chariots, and whose leisure had enabled them to practise military exercises. One such chief, if he were a man of great strength, agility, and courage, would probably be more formidable than twenty common men; and the force and dexterity with which he flung his spear might have no inconsiderable

share in deciding the event of the day. Such were probably the battles with which Homer was familiar. But Homer related the actions of men of a former generation, of men who sprang from the gods, and communed with the gods face to face; of men, one of whom could with ease hurl rocks which two sturdy hinds of a later period would be unable even to lift. He therefore naturally represented their martial exploits as resembling in kind, but far surpassing in magnitude, those of the stoutest and most expert combatants of his own age. Achilles, clad in celestial armor, drawn by celestial coursers, grasping the spear which none but himself could raise, driving all Troy and Lycia before him, and choking Scamander with dead, was only a magnificent exaggeration of the real hero, who, strong, fearless, accustomed to the use of weapons, guarded by a shield and helmet of the best Sidonian fabric, and whirled along by horses of Thessalian breed, struck down with his own right arm, foe after foe. In all rude societies similar notions are found. There are at this day countries where the Life-guardsman Shaw would be considered as a much

greater warrior than the Duke of Wellington. Bonaparte loved to describe the astonishment with which the Mamelukes looked at his diminutive figure. Mourad Bey, distinguished above all his fellows by his bodily strength, and by the skill with which he managed his horse and his sabre, could not believe that a man who was scarcely five feet high, and rode like a butcher, could be the greatest soldier in Europe.

56. Homer's descriptions of war had therefore as much truth as poetry requires. But truth was altogether wanting to the performances of those who, writing about battles which had scarcely anything in common with the battles of his times, servilely imitated his manner. The folly of Silius Italicus, in particular, is positively nauseous. He undertook to record in verse the vicissitudes of a great struggle between generals of the first order; and his narrative is made up of the hideous wounds which these generals inflicted with their own hands. Asdrubal flings a spear, which grazes the shoulder of the consul Nero; but Nero sends his spear into Asdrubal's side. Fabius slays Thuris and Butes and Maris and Arses, and the long-

haired Adherbes, and the gigantic Thylis, and Sapharus and Monæsus, and the trumpeter Morinus. Hannibal runs Perusinus through the groin with a stake, and breaks the backbone of Telesinus with a huge stone. This detestable fashion was copied in modern times, and continued to prevail down to the age of Addison. Several versifiers had described William turning thousands to flight by his single prowess, and dyeing the Boyne with Irish blood. Nay, so estimable a writer as John Philips, the author of the Splendid Shilling, represented Marlborough as having won the battle of Blenheim merely by strength of muscle and skill in fence. The following lines may serve as an example: —

"Churchill, viewing where
The violence of Tallard most prevailed,
Came to oppose his slaughtering arm. With speed
Precipitate he rode, urging his way
O'er hills of gasping heroes, and fallen steeds
Rolling in death. Destruction, grim with blood,
Attends his furious course. Around his head
The glowing balls play innocent, while he
With dire impetuous sway deals fatal blows
Among the flying Gauls. In Gallic blood
He dyes his reeking sword, and strews the ground
With headless ranks. What can they do? Or how
Withstand his wide-destroying sword?"

57. Addison, with excellent sense and taste, departed from this ridiculous fashion. He reserved his praise for the qualities which made Marlborough truly great, — energy, sagacity, military science. But, above all, the poet extolled the firmness of that mind which, in the midst of confusion, uproar, and slaughter, examined and disposed everything with the serene wisdom of a higher intelligence.

58. Here it was that he introduced the famous comparison of Marlborough to an Angel guiding the whirlwind. We will not dispute the general justice of Johnson's remarks on this passage. But we must point out one circumstance which appears to have escaped all the critics. The extraordinary effect which this simile produced when it first appeared, and which to the following generation seemed inexplicable, is doubtless to be chiefly attributed to a line which most readers now regard as a feeble parenthesis:—

"Such as, of late, o'er pale Britannia passed."

Addison spoke, not of a storm, but of the storm. The great tempest of November, 1703, the only

tempest which in our latitude has equalled the rage of a tropical hurricane, had left a dreadful recollection in the minds of all men. No other tempest was ever in this country the occasion of a parliamentary address or of a public fast. Whole fleets had been cast away. Large mansions had been blown down. One prelate had been buried beneath the ruins of his palace. London and Bristol had presented the appearance of cities just sacked. Hundreds of families were still in mourning. The prostrate trunks of large trees, and the ruins of houses, still attested, in all the southern counties, the fury of the blast. The popularity which the simile of the Angel enjoyed among Addison's contemporaries, has always seemed to us to be a remarkable instance of the advantage which, in rhetoric and poetry, the particular has over the general.

59. Soon after the Campaign, was published Addison's Narrative of his Travels in Italy. The first effect produced by this narrative was disappointment. The crowd of readers who expected politics and scandal, speculations on the projects of Victor Amadeus, and anecdotes about the jollities

of convents and amours of cardinals and nuns, were confounded by finding that the writer's mind was much more occupied by the war between the Trojans and Rutulians than by the war between France and Austria; and that he seemed to have heard no scandal of later date than the gallantries of the Empress Faustina. In time, however, the judgment of the many was overruled by that of the few; and, before the book was reprinted, it was so eagerly sought that it sold for five times the original price. It is still read with pleasure: the style is pure and flowing; the classical quotations and allusions are numerous and happy; and we are now and then charmed by that singularly humane and delicate humor in which Addison excelled all men. Yet this agreeable work, even when considered merely as the history of a literary tour, may justly be censured on account of its faults of omission. We have already said that, though rich in extracts from the Latin poets, it contains scarcely any references to the Latin orators and historians. We must add, that it contains little, or rather no, information respecting the history and literature of modern Italy. To the best of our

remembrance, Addison does not mention Dante, Petrarch, Boccaccio, Boiardo, Berni, Lorenzo de' Medici, or Machiavelli. He coldly tells us that at Ferrara he saw the tomb of Ariosto, and that at Venice he heard the gondoliers sing verses of Tasso. But for Tasso and Ariosto he cared far less than for Valerius Flaccus and Sidonius Apollinaris. The gentle flow of the Ticin brings a line of Silius to his mind. The sulphurous steam of Albula suggests to him several passages of Martial. But he has not a word to say of the illustrious dead of Santa Croce; he crosses the wood of Ravenna without recollecting the Spectre Huntsman; and wanders up and down Rimini without one thought of Francesca. At Paris he had eagerly sought an introduction to Boileau; but he seems not to have been at all aware that at Florence he was in the vicinity of a poet with whom Boileau could not sustain a comparison, of the greatest lyric poet of modern times, Vincenzio Filicaja. This is the more remarkable, because Filicaja was the favorite poet of the accomplished Somers, under whose protection Addison travelled, and to whom the account of the Travels is dedicated. The truth is,

that Addison knew little, and cared less, about the literature of modern Italy. His favorite models were Latin. His favorite critics were French. Half the Tuscan poetry that he had read seemed to him monstrous, and the other half tawdry.

60. His Travels were followed by the lively opera of Rosamond. This piece was ill set to music, and therefore failed on the stage, but it completely succeeded in print, and is indeed excellent in its kind. The smoothness with which the verses glide, and the elasticity with which they bound, is, to our ears at least, very pleasing. We are inclined to think that if Addison had left heroic couplets to Pope, and blank verse to Rowe, and had employed himself in writing airy and spirited songs, his reputation as a poet would have stood far higher than it now does. Some years after his death, Rosamond was set to new music by Doctor Arne; and was performed with complete success. Several passages long retained their popularity, and were daily sung, during the latter part of George the Second's reign, at all the harpsichords in England.

61. While Addison thus amused himself, his

prospects, and the prospects of his party, were constantly becoming brighter and brighter. In the spring of 1705 the ministers were freed from the restraint imposed by a House of Commons in which Tories of the most perverse class had the ascendency. The elections were favorable to the Whigs. The coalition which had been tacitly and gradually formed was now openly avowed. The Great Seal was given to Cowper. Somers and Halifax were sworn of the Council. Halifax was sent in the following year to carry the decorations of the order of the garter to the Electoral Prince of Hanover, and was accompanied on this honorable mission by Addison, who had just been made Undersecretary of State. The Secretary of State under whom Addison first served was Sir Charles Hedges, a Tory. But Hedges was soon dismissed to make room for the most vehement of Whigs, Charles, Earl of Sunderland. In every department of the state, indeed, the High Churchmen were compelled to give place to their opponents. At the close of 1707, the Tories who still remained in office strove to rally, with Harley at their head. But the attempt, though favored by the Queen,

who had always been a Tory at heart, and who had now quarrelled with the Duchess of Marlborough, was unsuccessful. The time was not yet. The Captain General was at the height of popularity and glory. The Low Church party had a majority in Parliament. The country squires and rectors, though occasionally uttering a savage growl, were for the most part in a state of torpor, which lasted till they were roused into activity, and indeed into madness, by the prosecution of Sacheverell. Harley and his adherents were compelled to retire. The victory of the Whigs was complete. At the general election of 1708, their strength in the House of Commons became irresistible; and before the end of that year, Somers was made Lord President of the Council, and Wharton Lord Lieutenant of Ireland.

62. Addison sat for Malmsbury in the House of Commons which was elected in 1708. But the House of Commons was not the field for him. The bashfulness of his nature made his wit and eloquence useless in debate. He once rose, but could not overcome his diffidence, and ever after remained silent. Nobody can think it strange

that a great writer should fail as a speaker. But many, probably, will think it strange that Addison's failure as a speaker should have had no unfavorable effect on his success as a politician. In our time, a man of high rank and great fortune might, though speaking very little and very ill, hold a considerable post. But it would now be inconceivable that a mere adventurer, a man who, when out of office, must live by his pen, should in a few years become successively Undersecretary of State, Chief Secretary for Ireland, and Secretary of State, without some oratorical talent. Addison, without high birth, and with little property, rose to a post which dukes, the heads of the great houses of Talbot, Russell, and Bentinck, have thought it an honor to fill. Without opening his lips in debate, he rose to a post the highest that Chatham or Fox ever reached. And this he did before he had been nine years in Parliament. We must look for the explanation of this seeming miracle to the peculiar circumstances in which that generation was placed. During the interval which elapsed between the time when the Censorship of the Press ceased, and the time when parliamentary proceedings began to

be freely reported, literary talents were, to a public man, of much more importance, and oratorical talents of much less importance, than in our time. At present, the best way of giving rapid and wide publicity to a fact or an argument is to introduce that fact or argument into a speech made in Parliament. If a political tract were to appear superior to the Conduct of the Allies, or to the best numbers of the *Freeholder*, the circulation of such a tract would be languid indeed when compared with the circulation of every remarkable word uttered in the deliberations of the legislature. A speech made in the House of Commons at four in the morning is on thirty thousand tables before ten. A speech made on the Monday is read on the Wednesday by multitudes in Antrim and Aberdeenshire. The orator, by the help of the shorthand writer, has to a great extent superseded the pamphleteer. It was not so in the reign of Anne. The best speech could then produce no effect except on those who heard it. It was only by means of the press that the opinion of the public without doors could be influenced; and the opinion of the public without doors could not but be of the highest impor-

tance in a country governed by parliaments, and indeed at that time governed by triennial parliaments. The pen was, therefore, a more formidable political engine than the tongue. Mr. Pitt and Mr. Fox contended only in Parliament. But Walpole and Pulteney, the Pitt and Fox of an earlier period, had not done half of what was necessary, when they sat down amidst the acclamations of the House of Commons. They had still to plead their cause before the country, and this they could do only by means of the press. Their works are now forgotten. But it is certain that there were in Grub Street few more assiduous scribblers of Thoughts, Letters, Answers, Remarks, than these two great chiefs of parties. Pulteney, when leader of the Opposition, and possessed of thirty thousand a year, edited the *Craftsman*. Walpole, though not a man of literary habits, was the author of at least ten pamphlets, and retouched and corrected many more. These facts sufficiently show of how great importance literary assistance then was to the contending parties. St. John was certainly, in Anne's reign, the best Tory speaker; Cowper was probably the

best Whig speaker. But it may well be doubted whether St. John did so much for the Tories as Swift, and whether Cowper did so much for the Whigs as Addison. When these things are duly considered, it will not be thought strange that Addison should have climbed higher in the state than any other Englishman has ever, by means merely of literary talents, been able to climb. Swift would, in all probability, have climbed as high, if he had not been encumbered by his cassock and his pudding sleeves. As far as the homage of the great went, Swift had as much of it as if he had been Lord-Treasurer.

63. To the influence which Addison derived from his literary talents was added all the influence which arises from character. The world, always ready to think the worst of needy political adventurers, was forced to make one exception. Restlessness, violence, audacity, laxity of principle, are the vices ordinarily attributed to that class of men. But faction itself could not deny that Addison had, through all changes of fortune, been strictly faithful to his early opinions, and to his early friends; that his integrity was without

stain; that his whole deportment indicated a fine sense of the becoming; that in the utmost heat of controversy, his zeal was tempered by a regard for truth, humanity, and social decorum; that no outrage could ever provoke him to retaliation unworthy of a Christian and a gentleman; and that his only faults were a too sensitive delicacy, and a modesty which amounted to bashfulness.

64. He was undoubtedly one of the most popular men of his time; and much of his popularity he owed, we believe, to that very timidity which his friends lamented. That timidity often prevented him from exhibiting his talents to the best advantage. But it propitiated Nemesis. It averted that envy which would otherwise have been excited by fame so splendid, and by so rapid an elevation. No man is so great a favorite with the public as he who is at once an object of admiration, of respect, and of pity; and such were the feelings which Addison inspired. Those who enjoyed the privilege of hearing his familiar conversation, declared with one voice that it was superior even to his writings. The brilliant Mary Montague said, that she had known all the wits,

and that Addison was the best company in the world. The malignant Pope was forced to own, that there was a charm in Addison's talk which could be found nowhere else. Swift, when burning with animosity against the Whigs, could not but confess to Stella that, after all, he had never known any associate so agreeable as Addison. Steele, an excellent judge of lively conversation, said, that the conversation of Addison was at once the most polite, and the most mirthful, that could be imagined; that it was Terence and Catullus in one, heightened by an exquisite something which was neither Terence nor Catullus, but Addison alone. Young, an excellent judge of serious conversation, said, that when Addison was at his ease, he went on in a noble strain of thought and language, so as to chain the attention of every hearer. Nor were Addison's great colloquial powers more admirable than the courtesy and the softness of heart which appeared in his conversation. At the same time, it would be too much to say that he was wholly devoid of the malice which is, perhaps, inseparable from a keen sense of the ludicrous. He had one habit which both Swift

and Stella applauded, and which we hardly know how to blame. If his first attempts to set a presuming dunce right were ill received, he changed his tone, "assented with civil leer," and lured the flattered coxcomb deeper and deeper into absurdity. That such was his practice we should, we think, have guessed from his works. The *Tatler's* criticisms on Mr. Softly's sonnet, and the *Spectator's* dialogue with the politician who is so zealous for the honor of Lady Q—p—t—s, are excellent specimens of this innocent mischief.

65. Such were Addison's talents for conversation. But his rare gifts were not exhibited to crowds or to strangers. As soon as he entered a large company, as soon as he saw an unknown face, his lips were sealed, and his manners became constrained. None who met him only in great assemblies would have been able to believe that he was the same man who had often kept a few friends listening and laughing round a table, from the time when the play ended, till the clock of St. Paul's in Covent Garden struck four. Yet, even at such a table he was not seen to the best advantage. To enjoy his conversation in the

highest perfection, it was necessary to be alone with him, and to hear him, in his own phrase, think aloud. "There is no such thing," he used to say, "as real conversation, but between two persons."

66. This timidity, a timidity surely neither ungraceful nor unamiable, led Addison into the two most serious faults which can with justice be imputed to him. He found that wine broke the spell which lay on his fine intellect, and was therefore too easily seduced into convivial excess. Such excess was in that age regarded, even by grave men, as the most venial of all peccadilloes, and was so far from being a mark of ill-breeding, that it was almost essential to the character of a fine gentleman. But the smallest speck is seen on a white ground; and almost all the biographers of Addison have said something about this failing. Of any other statesman or writer of Queen Anne's reign, we should no more think of saying that he sometimes took too much wine, than that he wore a long wig and a sword.

67. To the excessive modesty of Addison's nature we must ascribe another fault which gen-

erally arises from a very different cause. He became a little too fond of seeing himself surrounded by a small circle of admirers, to whom he was as a king, or rather as a god. All these men were far inferior to him in ability, and some of them had very serious faults. Nor did those faults escape his observation; for, if ever there was an eye which saw through and through men, it was the eye of Addison. But with the keenest observation, and the finest sense of the ridiculous, he had a large charity. The feeling with which he looked on most of his humble companions was one of benevolence, slightly tinctured with contempt. He was at perfect ease in their company; he was grateful for their devoted attachment; and he loaded them with benefits. Their veneration for him appears to have exceeded that with which Johnson was regarded by Boswell, or Warburton by Hurd. It was not in the power of adulation to turn such a head, or deprave such a heart, as Addison's. But it must in candor be admitted that he contracted some of the faults which can scarcely be avoided by any person who is so unfortunate as to be the oracle of a small literary coterie.

68. One member of this little society was Eustace Budgell, a young Templar of some literature, and a distant relation of Addison. There was at this time no stain on the character of Budgell, and it is not improbable that his career would have been prosperous and honorable, if the life of his cousin had been prolonged. But, when the master was laid in the grave, the disciple broke loose from all restraint, descended rapidly from one degree of vice and misery to another, ruined his fortune by follies, attempted to repair it by crimes, and at length closed a wicked and unhappy life by self-murder. Yet, to the last, the wretched man, gambler, lampooner, cheat, forger, as he was, retained his affection and veneration for Addison, and recorded those feelings in the last lines which he traced before he hid himself from infamy under London Bridge.

69. Another of Addison's favorite companions was Ambrose Philips, a good Whig and a middling poet, who had the honor of bringing into fashion a species of composition which has been called, after his name, Namby Pamby. But the most remarkable members of the little senate, as

Pope long afterwards called it, were Richard Steele and Thomas Tickell.

70. Steele had known Addison from childhood. They had been together at the Charter House and at Oxford; but circumstances had then, for a time, separated them widely. Steele had left college without taking a degree, had been disinherited by a rich relation, had led a vagrant life, had served in the army, had tried to find the philosopher's stone, and had written a religious treatise and several comedies. He was one of those people whom it is impossible either to hate or to respect. His temper was sweet, his affections warm, his spirits lively, his passions strong, and his principles weak. His life was spent in sinning and repenting; in inculcating what was right, and doing what was wrong. In speculation, he was a man of piety and honor; in practice he was much of the rake and a little of the swindler. He was, however, so good-natured that it was not easy to be seriously angry with him, and that even rigid moralists felt more inclined to pity than to blame him, when he diced himself into a spunging-house or drank himself into a

fever. Addison regarded Steele with kindness not unmingled with scorn, tried, with little success, to keep him out of scrapes, introduced him to the great, procured a good place for him, corrected his plays, and, though by no means rich, lent him large sums of money. One of these loans appears, from a letter dated in August, 1708, to have amounted to a thousand pounds. These pecuniary transactions probably led to frequent bickerings. It is said that, on one occasion, Steele's negligence, or dishonesty, provoked Addison to repay himself by the help of a bailiff. We cannot join with Miss Aikin in rejecting this story. Johnson heard it from Savage, who heard it from Steele. Few private transactions which took place a hundred and twenty years ago, are proved by stronger evidence than this. But we can by no means agree with those who condemn Addison's severity. The most amiable of mankind may well be moved to indignation, when what he has earned hardly, and lent with great inconvenience to himself, for the purpose of relieving a friend in distress, is squandered with insane profusion. We will illustrate our meaning

by an example which is not the less striking because it is taken from fiction. Dr. Harrison, in Fielding's Amelia, is represented as the most benevolent of human beings; yet he takes in execution, not only the goods, but the person of his friend Booth. Dr. Harrison resorts to this strong measure because he has been informed that Booth, while pleading poverty as an excuse for not paying just debts, has been buying fine jewelry, and setting up a coach. No person who is well acquainted with Steele's life and correspondence can doubt that he behaved quite as ill to Addison as Booth was accused of behaving to Dr. Harrison. The real history, we have little doubt, was something like this: — A letter comes to Addison, imploring help in pathetic terms, and promising reformation and speedy repayment. Poor Dick declares that he has not an inch of candle, or a bushel of coals, or credit with the butcher for a shoulder of mutton. Addison is moved. He determines to deny himself some medals which are wanting to his series of the Twelve Cæsars; to put off buying the new edition of Bayle's Dictionary; and to wear his old sword and buckles

another year. In this way he manages to send a hundred pounds to his friend. The next day he calls on Steele, and finds scores of gentlemen and ladies assembled. The fiddles are playing. The table is groaning under champagne, burgundy, and pyramids of sweetmeats. Is it strange that a man whose kindness is thus abused, should send sheriff's officers to reclaim what is due to him?

71. Tickell was a young man, fresh from Oxford, who had introduced himself to public notice by writing a most ingenious and graceful little poem in praise of the opera of Rosamond. He deserved, and at length attained, the first place in Addison's friendship. For a time Steele and Tickell were on good terms. But they loved Addison too much to love each other, and at length became as bitter enemies as the rival bulls in Virgil.

72. At the close of 1708 Wharton became Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, and appointed Addison Chief Secretary. Addison was consequently under the necessity of quitting London for Dublin. Besides the chief secretaryship, which was then worth about two thousand pounds a year, he

obtained a patent appointing him keeper of the Irish Records for life, with a salary of three or four hundred a year. Budgell accompanied his cousin in the capacity of private secretary.

73. Wharton and Addison had nothing in common but Whiggism. The Lord Lieutenant was not only licentious and corrupt, but was distinguished from other libertines and jobbers by a callous impudence which presented the strongest contrast to the Secretary's gentleness and delicacy. Many parts of the Irish administration at this time appear to have deserved serious blame. But against Addison there was not a murmur. He long afterwards asserted, what all the evidence which we have ever seen tends to prove, that his diligence and integrity gained the friendship of all the most considerable persons in Ireland.

74. The parliamentary career of Addison in Ireland has, we think, wholly escaped the notice of all his biographers. He was elected member for the borough of Cavan in the summer of 1709; and in the journals of two sessions his name frequently occurs. Some of the entries appear to indicate that he so far overcame his timidity as to

make speeches. Nor is this by any means improbable; for the Irish House of Commons was a far less formidable audience than the English House; and many tongues which were tied by fear in the greater assembly became fluent in the smaller. Gerard Hamilton, for example, who, from fear of losing the fame gained by his single speech, sat mute at Westminster during forty years, spoke with great effect at Dublin when he was secretary to Lord Halifax.

75. While Addison was in Ireland, an event occurred to which he owes his high and permanent rank among British writers. As yet his fame rested on performances which, though highly respectable, were not built for duration, and which would, if he had produced nothing else, have now been almost forgotten; on some excellent Latin verses; on some English verses which occasionally rose above mediocrity; and on a book of travels, agreeably written, but not indicating any extraordinary powers of mind. These works showed him to be a man of taste, sense, and learning. The time had come when he was to prove himself a man of genius, and to enrich our literature with

compositions which will live as long as the English language.

76. In the spring of 1709 Steele formed a literary project, of which he was far indeed from foreseeing the consequences. Periodical papers had during many years been published in London. Most of these were political; but in some of them questions of morality, taste, and love-casuistry had been discussed. The literary merit of these works was small indeed; and even their names are now known only to the curious.

77. Steele had been appointed Gazetteer by Sunderland, at the request, it is said, of Addison, and thus had access to foreign intelligence earlier and more authentic than was in those times within the reach of an ordinary news-writer. This circumstance seems to have suggested to him the scheme of publishing a periodical paper on a new plan. It was to appear on the days on which the post left London for the country, which were, in that generation, the Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays. It was to contain the foreign news, accounts of theatrical representations, and the literary gossip of Will's and of the Grecian. It was

also to contain remarks on the fashionable topics of the day, compliments to beauties, pasquinades on noted sharpers, and criticisms on popular preachers. The aim of Steele does not appear to have been at first higher than this. He was not ill-qualified to conduct the work which he had planned. His public intelligence he drew from the best sources. He knew the town, and had paid dear for his knowledge. He had read much more than the dissipated men of that time were in the habit of reading. He was a rake among scholars, and a scholar among rakes. His style was easy and not incorrect; and though his wit and humor were of no high order, his gay animal spirits imparted to his compositions an air of vivacity which ordinary readers could hardly distinguish from comic genius. His writings have been well compared to those light wines which, though deficient in body and flavor, are yet a pleasant small drink, if not kept too long, or carried too far.

78. Isaac Bickerstaff, Esquire, Astrologer, was an imaginary person, almost as well known in that age as Mr. Paul Pry or Mr. Samuel Pickwick in

ours. Swift had assumed the name of Bickerstaff in a satirical pamphlet against Partridge, the maker of almanacs. Partridge had been fool enough to publish a furious reply. Bickerstaff had rejoined in a second pamphlet still more diverting than the first. All the wits had combined to keep up the joke, and the town was long in convulsions of laughter. Steele determined to employ the name which this controversy had made popular; and in April, 1709, it was announced that Isaac Bickerstaff, Esquire, Astrologer, was about to publish a paper called the *Tatler*.

79. Addison had not been consulted about this scheme; but as soon as he heard of it he determined to give his assistance. The effect of that assistance cannot be better described than in Steele's own words. "I fared," he said, "like a distressed prince who calls in a powerful neighbor to his aid. I was undone by my auxiliary. When I had once called him in, I could not subsist without dependence on him." "The paper," he says elsewhere, "was advanced indeed. It was raised to a greater thing than I intended it."

80. It is probable that Addison, when he sent

across St. George's Channel his first contributions to the *Tatler*, had no notion of the extent and variety of his own powers. He was the possessor of a vast mine, rich with a hundred ores. But he had been acquainted only with the least precious part of his treasures, and had hitherto contented himself with producing sometimes copper and sometimes lead, intermingled with a little silver. All at once, and by mere accident, he had lighted on an inexhaustible vein of the finest gold.

81. The mere choice and arrangement of his words would have sufficed to make his essays classical. For never, not even by Dryden, not even by Temple, had the English language been written with such sweetness, grace, and facility. But this was the smallest part of Addison's praise. Had he clothed his thoughts in the half French style of Horace Walpole, or in the half Latin style of Dr. Johnson, or in the half German jargon of the present day, his genius would have triumphed over all faults of manner. As a moral satirist he stands unrivalled. If ever the best *Tatlers* and *Spectators* were equalled in their own kind, we should be inclined to guess that it must have been by the lost comedies of Menander.

82. In wit, properly so called, Addison was not inferior to Cowley or Butler. No single ode of Cowley contains so many happy analogies as are crowded into the lines to Sir Godfrey Kneller; and we would undertake to collect from the *Spectators* as great a number of ingenious illustrations as can be found in Hudibras. The still higher faculty of invention Addison possessed in still larger measure. The numerous fictions, generally original, often wild and grotesque, but always singularly graceful and happy, which are found in his essays, fully entitle him to the rank of a great poet, a rank to which his metrical compositions give him no claim. As an observer of life, of manners, of all the shades of human character, he stands in the first class. And what he observed he had the art of communicating in two widely different ways. He could describe virtues, vices, habits, whims as well as Clarendon. But he could do something better. He could call human beings into existence, and make them exhibit themselves. If we wish to find anything more vivid than Addison's best portraits, we must go either to Shakespeare or to Cervantes.

83. But what shall we say of Addison's humor, of his sense of the ludicrous, of his power of awakening that sense in others, and of drawing mirth from incidents which occur every day, and from little peculiarities of temper and manner, such as may be found in every man? We feel the charm: we give ourselves up to it; but we strive in vain to analyze it.

84. Perhaps the best way of describing Addison's peculiar pleasantry is to compare it with the pleasantry of some other great satirists. The three most eminent masters of the art of ridicule during the eighteenth century, were, we conceive, Addison, Swift, and Voltaire. Which of the three had the greatest power of moving laughter may be questioned. But each of them, within his own domain, was supreme.

85. Voltaire is the prince of buffoons. His merriment is without disguise or restraint. He gambols; he grins; he shakes his sides; he points the finger; he turns up the nose; he shoots out the tongue. The manner of Swift is the very opposite to this. He moves laughter, but never joins in it. He appears in his works such as he

appeared in society. All the company are convulsed with merriment, while the Dean, the author of all the mirth, preserves an invincible gravity, and even sourness of aspect, and gives utterance to the most eccentric and ludicrous of fancies, with the air of a man reading the commination service.

86. The manner of Addison is as remote from that of Swift as from that of Voltaire. He neither laughs out like the French wit, nor, like the Irish wit, throws a double portion of severity into his countenance while laughing inwardly; but preserves a look peculiarly his own, a look of demure serenity, disturbed only by an arch sparkle of the eye, an almost imperceptible elevation of the brow, an almost imperceptible curl of the lip. His tone is never that either of a Jack Pudding or of a cynic. It is that of a gentleman, in whom the quickest sense of the ridiculous is constantly tempered by good nature and good breeding.

87. We own that the humor of Addison is, in our opinion, of a more delicious flavor than the humor of either Swift or Voltaire. Thus much, at least, is certain, that both Swift and Voltaire have been successfully mimicked, and that no man

has yet been able to mimic Addison. The letter of the Abbé Coyer to Pansophe is Voltaire all over, and imposed, during a long time, on the Academicians of Paris. There are passages in Arbuthnot's satirical works which we, at least, cannot distinguish from Swift's best writing. But of the many eminent men who have made Addison their model, though several have copied his mere diction with happy effect, none have been able to catch the tone of his pleasantry. In the *World*, in the *Connoisseur*, in the *Mirror*, in the *Lounger*, there are numerous papers written in obvious imitation of his *Tatlers* and *Spectators*. Most of these papers have some merit; many are very lively and amusing; but there is not a single one which could be passed off as Addison's on a critic of the smallest perspicacity.

88. But that which chiefly distinguishes Addison from Swift, from Voltaire, from almost all the other great masters of ridicule, is the grace, the nobleness, the moral purity, which we find even in his merriment. Severity, gradually hardening and darkening into misanthropy, characterizes the works of Swift. The nature of Voltaire was, in-

deed, not inhuman; but he venerated nothing. Neither in the masterpieces of art nor in the purest examples of virtue, neither in the Great First Cause nor in the awful enigma of the grave, could he see anything but subjects for drollery. The more solemn and august the theme, the more monkey-like was his grimacing and chattering. The mirth of Swift is the mirth of Mephistopheles; the mirth of Voltaire is the mirth of Puck. If, as Soame Jenyns oddly imagined, a portion of the happiness of seraphim and just men made perfect be derived from an exquisite perception of the ludicrous, their mirth must surely be none other than the mirth of Addison; a mirth consistent with tender compassion for all that is frail, and with profound reverence for all that is sublime. Nothing great, nothing amiable, no moral duty, no doctrine of natural or revealed religion, has ever been associated by Addison with any degrading idea. His humanity is without a parallel in literary history. The highest proof of virtue is to possess boundless power without abusing it. No kind of power is more formidable than the power of making men ridicu-

lous; and that power Addison possessed in boundless measure. How grossly that power was abused by Swift and by Voltaire is well known. But of Addison it may be confidently affirmed that he has blackened no man's character, nay, that it would be difficult, if not impossible, to find in all the volumes which he has left us a single taunt which can be called ungenerous or unkind. Yet he had detractors, whose malignity might have seemed to justify as terrible a revenge as that which men, not superior to him in genius, wreaked on Bettesworth and on Franc de Pompignan. He was a politician; he was the best writer of his party; he lived in times of fierce excitement, in times when persons of high character and station stooped to scurrility such as is now practised only by the basest of mankind. Yet no provocation and no example could induce him to return railing for railing.

89. Of the service which his Essays rendered to morality it is difficult to speak too highly. It is true, that, when the *Tatler* appeared, that age of outrageous profaneness and licentiousness which followed the Restoration had passed away. Jeremy

Collier had shamed the theatres into something which, compared with the excesses of Etherege and Wycherley, might be called decency. Yet there still lingered in the public mind a pernicious notion that there was some connection between genius and profligacy; between the domestic virtues and the sullen formality of the Puritans. That error it is the glory of Addison to have dispelled. He taught the nation that the faith and the morality of Hale and Tillotson might be found in company with wit more sparkling than the wit of Congreve, and with humor richer than the humor of Vanbrugh. So effectually, indeed, did he retort on vice the mockery which had recently been directed against virtue, that, since his time, the open violation of decency has always been considered among us as the mark of a fool. And this revolution, the greatest and most salutary ever effected by any satirist, he accomplished, be it remembered, without writing one personal lampoon.

90. In the early contributions of Addison to the *Tatler*, his peculiar powers were not fully exhibited. Yet from the first, his superiority to all his coadjutors was evident. Some of his later

Tatlers are fully equal to anything that he ever wrote. Among the portraits, we most admire Tom Folio, Ned Softly, and the Political Upholsterer. The proceedings of the Court of Honor, the Thermometer of Zeal, the story of the Frozen Words, the Memoirs of the Shilling, are excellent specimens of that ingenious and lively species of fiction in which Addison excelled all men. There is one still better paper of the same class. But though that paper, a hundred and thirty-three years ago, was probably thought as edifying as one of Smalridge's sermons, we dare not indicate it to the squeamish readers of the nineteenth century.

91. During the session of Parliament which commenced in November, 1709, and which the impeachment of Sacheverell has made memorable, Addison appears to have resided in London. The *Tatler* was now more popular than any periodical paper had ever been; and his connection with it was generally known. It was not known, however, that almost everything good in the *Tatler* was his. The truth is, that the fifty or sixty numbers which we owe to him were not merely

the best, but so decidedly the best that any five of them are more valuable than all the two hundred numbers in which he had no share.

92. He required, at this time, all the solace which he could derive from literary success. The Queen had always disliked the Whigs. She had during some years disliked the Marlborough family. But, reigning by a disputed title, she could not venture directly to oppose herself to a majority of both Houses of Parliament; and, engaged as she was in a war on the event of which her own crown was staked, she could not venture to disgrace a great and successful general. But at length, in the year 1710, the causes which had restrained her from showing her aversion to the Low Church party ceased to operate. The trial of Sacheverell produced an outbreak of public feeling scarcely less violent than the outbreaks which we can ourselves remember in 1820, and in 1831. The country gentlemen, the country clergymen, the rabble of the towns, were all, for once, on the same side. It was clear that, if a general election took place before the excitement abated, the Tories would have a majority. The services

of Marlborough had been so splendid that they were no longer necessary. The Queen's throne was secure from all attack on the part of Louis. Indeed, it seemed much more likely that the English and German armies would divide the spoils of Versailles and Marli than that a Marshal of France would bring back the Pretender to St. James's. The Queen, acting by the advice of Harley, determined to dismiss her servants. In June the change commenced. Sunderland was the first who fell. The Tories exulted over his fall. The Whigs tried, during a few weeks, to persuade themselves that her majesty had acted only from personal dislike to the Secretary, and that she meditated no further alteration. But, early in August, Godolphin was surprised by a letter from Anne, which directed him to break his white staff. Even after this event, the irresolution or dissimulation of Harley kept up the hopes of the Whigs during another month; and then the ruin became rapid and violent. The Parliament was dissolved. The ministers were turned out. The Tories were called to office. The tide of popularity ran violently in favor of the High Church party. That

party, feeble in the late House of Commons, was now irresistible. The power which the Tories had thus suddenly acquired, they used with blind and stupid ferocity. The howl which the whole pack set up for prey and for blood appalled even him who had roused and unchained them. When, at this distance of time, we calmly review the conduct of the discarded ministers, we cannot but feel a movement of indignation at the injustice with which they were treated. No body of men had ever administered the government with more energy, ability, and moderation; and their success had been proportioned to their wisdom. They had saved Holland and Germany. They had humbled France. They had, as it seemed, all but torn Spain from the house of Bourbon. They had made England the first power in Europe. At home they had united England and Scotland. They had respected the rights of conscience and the liberty of the subject. They retired, leaving their country at the height of prosperity and glory. And yet they were pursued to their retreat by such a roar of obloquy as was never raised against the government which threw away thirteen

colonies, or against the government which sent a gallant army to perish in the ditches of Walcheren.

93. None of the Whigs suffered more in the general wreck than Addison. He had just sustained some heavy pecuniary losses, of the nature of which we are imperfectly informed, when his secretaryship was taken from him. He had reason to believe that he should also be deprived of the small Irish office which he held by patent. He had just resigned his fellowship. It seems probable that he had already ventured to raise his eyes to a great lady, and that, while his political friends were in power, and while his own fortunes were rising, he had been, in the phrase of the romances which were then fashionable, permitted to hope. But Mr. Addison the ingenious writer, and Mr. Addison the chief secretary, were, in her ladyship's opinion, two very different persons. All these calamities united, however, could not disturb the serene cheerfulness of a mind conscious of innocence, and rich in its own wealth. He told his friends, with smiling resignation, that they ought to admire his philosophy; that he had

lost at once his fortune, his place, his fellowship, and his mistress; that he must think of turning tutor again; and yet that his spirits were as good as ever.

94. He had one consolation. Of the unpopularity which his friends had incurred, he had no share. Such was the esteem with which he was regarded that, while the most violent measures were taken for the purpose of forcing Tory members on Whig corporations, he was returned to Parliament without even a contest. Swift, who was now in London, and who had already determined on quitting the Whigs, wrote to Stella in these remarkable words: "The Tories carry it among the new members six to one. Mr. Addison's election has passed easily and undisputed; and I believe if he had a mind to be king he would hardly be refused."

95. The good will with which the Tories regarded Addison is the more honorable to him, because it had not been purchased by any concession on his part. During the general election he published a political journal, entitled the *Whig Examiner*. Of that journal it may be sufficient to

say that Johnson, in spite of his strong political prejudices, pronounced it to be superior in wit to any of Swift's writings on the other side. When it ceased to appear, Swift, in a letter to Stella, expressed his exultation at the death of so formidable an antagonist. "He might well rejoice," says Johnson, "at the death of that which he could not have killed." "On no occasion," he adds, "was the genius of Addison more vigorously exerted, and on none did the superiority of his powers more evidently appear."

96. The only use which Addison appears to have made of the favor with which he was regarded by the Tories was to save some of his friends from the general ruin of the Whig party. He felt himself to be in a situation which made it his duty to take a decided part in politics. But the case of Steele and of Ambrose Philips was different. For Philips, Addison even condescended to solicit, with what success we have not ascertained. Steele held two places. He was Gazetteer, and he was also a Commissioner of Stamps. The Gazette was taken from him. But he was suffered to retain his place in the Stamp

Office, on an implied understanding that he should not be active against the new government; and he was, during more than two years, induced by Addison to observe this armistice with tolerable fidelity.

97. Isaac Bickerstaff accordingly became silent upon politics, and the article of news which had once formed about one-third of his paper, altogether disappeared. The *Tatler* had completely changed its character. It was now nothing but a series of essays on books, morals, and manners. Steele therefore resolved to bring it to a close, and to commence a new work on an improved plan. It was announced that this new work would be published daily. The undertaking was generally regarded as bold, or rather rash; but the event amply justified the confidence with which Steele relied on the fertility of Addison's genius. On the second of January, 1711, appeared the last *Tatler*. At the beginning of March following appeared the first of an incomparable series of papers, containing observations on life and literature by an imaginary spectator.

98. The Spectator himself was conceived and

drawn by Addison; and it is not easy to doubt that the portrait was meant to be in some features a likeness of the painter. The Spectator is a gentleman who, after passing a studious youth at the university, has travelled on classic ground, and has bestowed much attention on curious points of antiquity. He has, on his return, fixed his residence in London, and has observed all the forms of life which are to be found in that great city; has daily listened to the wits of Will's, has smoked with the philosophers of the Grecian, and has mingled with the parsons at Child's, and with the politicians at the St. James's. In the morning, he often listens to the hum of the Exchange; in the evening, his face is constantly to be seen in the pit of Drury Lane Theatre. But an insurmountable bashfulness prevents him from opening his mouth except in a small circle of intimate friends.

99. These friends were first sketched by Steele. Four of the club, the templar, the clergyman, the soldier, and the merchant, were uninteresting figures, fit only for a background. But the other two, an old country baronet and an old town rake,

though not delineated with a very delicate pencil, had some good strokes. Addison took the rude outlines into his own hands, retouched them, colored them, and is in truth the creator of the Sir Roger de Coverley and the Will Honeycomb with whom we are all familiar.

100. The plan of the Spectator must be allowed to be both original and eminently happy. Every valuable essay in the series may be read with pleasure separately; yet the five or six hundred essays form a whole, and a whole which has the interest of a novel. It must be remembered, too, that at that time no novel, giving a lively and powerful picture of the common life and manners of England, had appeared. Richardson was working as a compositor. Fielding was robbing birds' nests. Smollett was not yet born. The narrative, therefore, which connects together the Spectator's essays, gave to our ancestors their first taste of an exquisite and untried pleasure. That narrative was indeed constructed with no art or labor. The events were such events as occur every day. Sir Roger comes up to town to see Eugenio, as the worthy baronet always calls Prince Eugene, goes

with the Spectator on the water to Spring Gardens, walks among the tombs in the Abbey, and is frightened by the Mohawks, but conquers his apprehension so far as to go to the theatre when the Distressed Mother is acted. The Spectator pays a visit in the summer to Coverley Hall, is charmed with the old house, the old butler, and the old chaplain, eats a jack caught by Will Wimble, rides to the assizes, and hears a point of law discussed by Tom Touchy. At last a letter from the honest butler brings to the club the news that Sir Roger is dead. Will Honeycomb marries and reforms at sixty. The club breaks up; and the Spectator resigns his functions. Such events can hardly be said to form a plot; yet they are related with such truth, such grace, such wit, such humor, such pathos, such knowledge of the human heart, such knowledge of the ways of the world, that they charm us on the hundredth perusal. We have not the least doubt that if Addison had written a novel, on an extensive plan, it would have been superior to any that we possess. As it is, he is entitled to be considered not only as the greatest of the English essayists, but as the forerunner of the great English novelists.

101. We say this of Addison alone; for Addison is the Spectator. About three-sevenths of the work are his; and it is no exaggeration to say, that his worst essay is as good as the best essay of any of his coadjutors. His best essays approach near to absolute perfection; nor is their excellence more wonderful than their variety. His invention never seems to flag; nor is he ever under the necessity of repeating himself, or of wearing out a subject. There are no dregs in his wine. He regales us after the fashion of that prodigal nabob who held that there was only one good glass in a bottle. As soon as we have tasted the first sparkling foam of a jest, it is withdrawn, and a fresh draught of nectar is at our lips. On the Monday, we have an allegory as lively and ingenious as Lucian's Auction of Lives; on the Tuesday, an Eastern apologue as richly colored as the Tales of Scheherezade; on the Wednesday, a character described with the skill of La Bruyère; on the Thursday, a scene from common life, equal to the best chapters in the Vicar of Wakefield; on the Friday, some sly Horatian pleasantry on fashionable follies,— on hoops, patches, or puppet-

shows; and on the Saturday, a religious meditation, which will bear a comparison with the finest passages in Massillon.

102. It is dangerous to select where there is so much that deserves the highest praise. We will venture, however, to say, that any person who wishes to form a just notion of the extent and variety of Addison's powers, will do well to read at one sitting the following papers: The two Visits to the Abbey, the visit to the Exchange, the Journal of the Retired Citizen, the Vision of Mirza, the Transmigrations of Pug the Monkey, and the Death of Sir Roger de Coverley.

103. The least valuable of Addison's contributions to the *Spectator* are, in the judgment of our age, his critical papers. Yet his critical papers are always luminous, and often ingenious. The very worst of them must be regarded as creditable to him, when the character of the school in which he had been trained is fairly considered. The best of them were much too good for his readers. In truth, he was not so far behind our generation as he was before his own. No essays in the *Spectator* were more censured and derided than those in

which he raised his voice against the contempt with which our fine old ballads were regarded, and showed the scoffers that the same gold which, burnished and polished, gives lustre to the Æneid and the Odes of Horace, is mingled with the rude dross of Chevy Chase.

104. It is not strange that the success of the *Spectator* should have been such as no similar work has ever obtained. The number of copies daily distributed was at first three thousand. It subsequently increased, and had risen to near four thousand when the stamp tax was imposed. That tax was fatal to a crowd of journals. The *Spectator*, however, stood its ground, doubled its price, and, though its circulation fell off, still yielded a large revenue both to the state and to the authors. For particular papers, the demand was immense; of some, it is said, twenty thousand copies were required. But this was not all. To have the *Spectator* served up every morning with the bohea and rolls was a luxury for the few. The majority were content to wait till essays enough had appeared to form a volume. Ten thousand copies of each volume were immediately taken off, and

new editions were called for. It must be remembered, that the population of England was then hardly a third of what it now is. The number of Englishmen who were in the habit of reading, was probably not a sixth of what it now is. A shopkeeper or a farmer who found any pleasure in literature, was a rarity. Nay, there was doubtless more than one knight of the shire whose country seat did not contain ten books, receipt-books and books on farriery included. In these circumstances, the sale of the *Spectator* must be considered as indicating a popularity quite as great as that of the most successful works of Sir Walter Scott and Mr. Dickens in our own time.

105. At the close of 1712 the *Spectator* ceased to appear. It was probably felt that the shortfaced gentleman and his club had been long enough before the town; and that it was time to withdraw them, and to replace them by a new set of characters. In a few weeks the first number of the *Guardian* was published. But the *Guardian* was unfortunate both in its birth and in its death. It began in dulness and disappeared in a tempest of faction. The original plan was bad. Addison

contributed nothing till sixty-six numbers had appeared; and it was then impossible to make the *Guardian* what the *Spectator* had been. Nestor Ironside and the Miss Lizards were people to whom even he could impart no interest. He could only furnish some excellent little essays, both serious and comic; and this he did.

106. Why Addison gave no assistance to the *Guardian* during the first two months of its existence, is a question which has puzzled the editors and biographers, but which seems to us to admit of a very easy solution. He was then engaged in bringing his Cato on the stage.

107. The first four acts of this drama had been lying in his desk since his return from Italy. His modest and sensitive nature shrank from the risk of a public and shameful failure; and, though all who saw the manuscript were loud in praise, some thought it possible that an audience might become impatient even of very good rhetoric, and advised Addison to print the play without hazarding a representation. At length, after many fits of apprehension, the poet yielded to the urgency of his political friends, who hoped that the public

would discover some analogy between the followers of Cæsar and the Tories, between Sempronius and the apostate Whigs, between Cato, struggling to the last for the liberties of Rome, and the band of patriots who still stood firm round Halifax and Wharton.

108. Addison gave the play to the managers of Drury Lane Theatre, without stipulating for any advantage to himself. They, therefore, thought themselves bound to spare no cost in scenery and dresses. The decorations, it is true, would not have pleased the skilful eye of Mr. Macready. Juba's waistcoat blazed with gold lace; Marcia's hoop was worthy of a duchess on the birthday; and Cato wore a wig worth fifty guineas. The prologue was written by Pope, and is undoubtedly a dignified and spirited composition. The part of the hero was excellently played by Booth. Steele undertook to pack a house. The boxes were in a blaze with the stars of the Peers in Opposition. The pit was crowded with attentive and friendly listeners from the Inns of Court and the literary coffee-houses. Sir Gilbert Heathcote, Governor of the Bank of England, was at the head of a power-

ful body of auxiliaries from the city, warm men and true Whigs, but better known at Jonathan's and Garraway's than in the haunts of wits and critics.

109. These precautions were quite superfluous. The Tories, as a body, regarded Addison with no unkind feelings. Nor was it for their interest, professing, as they did, profound reverence for law and prescription, an abhorrence both of popular insurrections and of standing armies, to appropriate to themselves reflections thrown on the great military chief and demagogue, who, with the support of the legions and of the common people, subverted all the ancient institutions of his country. Accordingly, every shout that was raised by the members of the Kit Cat was echoed by the High Churchmen of the October; and the curtain at length fell amidst thunders of unanimous applause.

110. The delight and admiration of the town were described by the *Guardian* in terms which we might attribute to partiality, were it not that the *Examiner*, the organ of the ministry, held similar language. The Tories, indeed, found

much to sneer at in the conduct of their opponents. Steele had on this, as on other occasions, shown more zeal than taste or judgment. The honest citizens who marched under the orders of Sir Gibby, as he was facetiously called, probably knew better when to buy and when to sell stock than when to clap and when to hiss at a play, and incurred some ridicule by making the hypocritical Sempronius their favorite, and by giving to his insincere rants louder plaudits than they bestowed on the temperate eloquence of Cato. Wharton, too, who had the incredible effrontery to applaud the lines about flying from prosperous vice and from the power of impious men to a private station, did not escape the sarcasms of those who justly thought that he could fly from nothing more vicious or impious than himself. The epilogue, which was written by Garth, a zealous Whig, was severely and not unreasonably censured as ignoble and out of place. But Addison was described, even by the bitterest Tory writers, as a gentleman of wit and virtue, in whose friendship many persons of both parties were happy, and whose name ought not to be mixed up with factious squabbles.

111. Of the jests by which the triumph of the Whig party was disturbed, the most severe and happy was Bolingbroke's. Between two acts he sent for Booth to his box, and presented him, before the whole theatre, with a purse of fifty guineas for defending the cause of liberty so well against a perpetual Dictator. This was a pungent allusion to the attempt which Marlborough had made, not long before his fall, to obtain a patent creating him Captain General for life.

112. It was April; and in April, a hundred and thirty years ago, the London season was thought to be far advanced. During a whole month, however, Cato was performed to overflowing houses, and brought into the treasury of the theatre twice the gains of an ordinary spring. In the summer the Drury Lane company went down to act at Oxford, and there, before an audience which retained an affectionate remembrance of Addison's accomplishments and virtues, his tragedy was enacted during several days. The gownsmen began to besiege the theatre in the forenoon, and by one in the afternoon all the seats were filled.

113. About the merits of the piece which had so

extraordinary an effect, the public, we suppose, has made up its mind. To compare it with the masterpieces of the Attic stage, with the great English dramas of the time of Elizabeth, or even with the productions of Schiller's manhood, would be absurd indeed; yet it contains excellent dialogue and declamation, and, among plays fashioned on the French model, must be allowed to rank high, — not indeed with Athalie or Saul, but, we think, not below Cinna, and certainly above any other English tragedy of the same school; above many of the plays of Corneille; above many of the plays of Voltaire and Alfieri; and above some plays of Racine. Be this as it may, we have little doubt that Cato did as much as the *Tatlers*, *Spectators*, and *Freeholders* united, to raise Addison's fame among his contemporaries.

114. The modesty and good nature of the successful dramatist had tamed even the malignity of faction. But literary envy, it should seem, is a fiercer passion than party spirit. It was by a zealous Whig that the fiercest attack on the Whig tragedy was made. John Dennis published Remarks on Cato, which were written with some

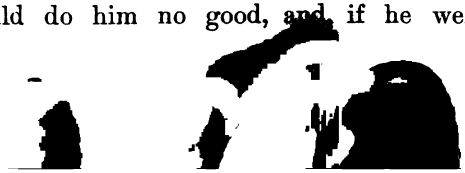
acuteness and with much coarseness and asperity. Addison neither defended himself nor retaliated. On many points he had an excellent defence, and nothing would have been easier than to retaliate; for Dennis had written bad odes, bad tragedies, bad comedies: he had, moreover, a larger share than most men of those infirmities and eccentricities which excite laughter; and Addison's power of turning either an absurd book or an absurd man into ridicule was unrivalled. Addison, however, serenely conscious of his superiority, looked with pity on his assailant, whose temper, naturally irritable and gloomy, had been soured by want, by controversy, and by literary failures.

115. But among the young candidates for Addison's favor there was one distinguished by talents from the rest, and distinguished, we fear, not less by malignity and insincerity. Pope was only twenty-five. But his powers had expanded to their full maturity; and his best poem, the Rape of the Lock, had recently been published. Of his genius Addison had always expressed high admiration. But Addison had early discerned, what might, indeed, have been discerned by an eye less

penetrating than his, that the diminutive, crooked, sickly boy was eager to revenge himself on society for the unkindness of nature. In the *Spectator* the Essay on Criticism had been praised with cordial warmth; but a gentle hint had been added that the writer of so excellent a poem would have done well to avoid ill-natured personalities. Pope, though evidently more galled by the censure than gratified by the praise, returned thanks for the admonition, and promised to profit by it. The two writers continued to exchange civilities, counsel, and small good offices. Addison publicly extolled Pope's miscellaneous pieces, and Pope furnished Addison with a prologue. This did not last long. Pope hated Dennis, whom he had injured without provocation. The appearance of the Remarks on Cato gave the irritable poet an opportunity of venting his malice under the show of friendship; and such an opportunity could not but be welcome to a nature which was implacable in enmity, and which always preferred the tortuous to the straight path. He published, accordingly, the Narrative of the Frenzy of John Dennis. But Pope had mistaken his powers. He was a great

master of invective and sarcasm; he could dissect a character in terse and sonorous couplets, brilliant with antithesis; but of dramatic talent he was altogether destitute. If he had written a lampoon on Dennis, such as that on Atticus or that on Sporus, the old grumbler would have been crushed. But Pope writing dialogue resembled — to borrow Horace's imagery and his own — a wolf, which, instead of biting, should take to kicking, or a monkey which should try to sting. The Narrative is utterly contemptible. Of argument there is not even the show, and the jests are such as, if they were introduced into a farce, would call forth the hisses of the shilling gallery. Dennis raves about the drama, and the nurse thinks that he is calling for a dram. "There is," he cries, "no peripetia in the tragedy, no change of fortune, no change at all." "Pray, good sir, be not angry," says the old woman, "I'll fetch change." This is not exactly the pleasantry of Addison.

116. There can be no doubt that Addison saw through this officious zeal, and felt himself deeply aggrieved by it. So foolish and spiteful a pamphlet could do him no good, and if he were



thought to have any hand in it, must do him harm. Gifted with incomparable powers of ridicule, he had never, even in self-defence, used those powers inhumanly or uncourteously; and he was not disposed to let others make his fame and his interests a pretext under which they might commit outrages from which he had himself constantly abstained. He accordingly declared that he had no concern in the Narrative, that he disapproved of it, and that if he answered the Remarks, he would answer them like a gentleman; and he took care to communicate this to Dennis. Pope was bitterly mortified, and to this transaction we are inclined to ascribe the hatred with which he ever after regarded Addison.

117. In September, 1713, the *Guardian* ceased to appear. Steele had gone mad about politics. A general election had just taken place: he had been chosen member for Stockbridge, and he fully expected to play a first part in Parliament. The immense success of the *Tatler* and *Spectator* had turned his head. He had been the editor of both those papers, and was not aware how entirely they owed their influence and popularity to the genius

of his friend. His spirits, always violent, were now excited by vanity, ambition, and faction, to such a pitch that he every day committed some offence against good sense and good taste. All the discreet and moderate members of his own party regretted and condemned his folly. "I am in a thousand troubles," Addison wrote, "about poor Dick, and wish that his zeal for the public may not be ruinous to himself. But he has sent me word that he is determined to go on, and that any advice I may give him in this particular will have no weight with him."

118. Steele set up a political paper called the *Englishman*, which, as it was not supported by contributions from Addison, completely failed. By this work, by some other writings of the same kind, and by the airs which he gave himself at the first meeting of the new Parliament, he made the Tories so angry that they determined to expel him. The Whigs stood by him gallantly, but were unable to save him. The vote of expulsion was regarded by all dispassionate men as a tyrannical exercise of the power of the majority. But Steele's violence and folly, though they by no

means justified the steps which his enemies took, had completely disgusted his friends; nor did he ever regain the place which he had held in the public estimation.

119. Addison about this time conceived the design of adding an eighth volume to the *Spectator*. In June, 1714, the first number of the new series appeared, and during about six months three papers were published weekly. Nothing can be more striking than the contrast between the *Englishman* and the eighth volume of the *Spectator*, between Steele without Addison and Addison without Steele. The *Englishman* is forgotten; the eighth volume of the *Spectator* contains, perhaps, the finest essays, both serious and playful, in the English language.

120. Before this volume was completed, the death of Anne produced an entire change in the administration of public affairs. The blow fell suddenly. It found the Tory party distracted by internal feuds, and unprepared for any great effort. Harley had just been disgraced. Bolingbroke, it was supposed, would be the chief minister. But the Queen was on her death-bed before the white

staff had been given, and her last public act was to deliver it with a feeble hand to the Duke of Shrewsbury. The emergency produced a coalition between all sections of public men who were attached to the Protestant succession. George the First was proclaimed without opposition. A council, in which the leading Whigs had seats, took the direction of affairs till the new King should arrive. The first act of the Lords Justices was to appoint Addison their secretary.

121. There is an idle tradition that he was directed to prepare a letter to the King, that he could not satisfy himself as to the style of this composition, and that the Lords Justices called in a clerk, who at once did what was wanted. It is not strange that a story so flattering to mediocrity should be popular; and we are sorry to deprive dunces of their consolation. But the truth must be told. It was well observed by Sir James Mackintosh, whose knowledge of these times was unequalled, that Addison never, in any official document, affected wit or eloquence, and that his despatches are, without exception, remarkable for unpretending simplicity. Everybody who knows

with what ease Addison's finest essays were produced, must be convinced that, if well-turned phrases had been wanted, he would have had no difficulty in finding them. We are, however, inclined to believe, that the story is not absolutely without a foundation. It may well be that Addison did not know, till he had consulted experienced clerks who remembered the times when William the Third was absent on the Continent, in what form a letter from the Council of Regency to the King ought to be drawn. We think it very likely that the ablest statesmen of our time, Lord John Russell, Sir Robert Peel, Lord Palmerston, for example, would, in similar circumstances, be found quite as ignorant. Every office has some little mysteries which the dullest man may learn with a little attention, and which the greatest man cannot possibly know by intuition. One paper must be signed by the chief of the department; another by his deputy; to a third the royal sign manual is necessary. One communication is to be registered, and another is not. One sentence must be in black ink, and another in red ink. If the ablest secretary for Ireland were moved to the

India Board, if the ablest President of the India Board were moved to the War Office, he would require instruction on points like these; and we do not doubt that Addison required such instruction when he became, for the first time, Secretary to the Lords Justices.

122. George the First took possession of his kingdom without opposition. A new ministry was formed, and a new Parliament favorable to the Whigs chosen. Sunderland was appointed Lord Lieutenant of Ireland; and Addison again went to Dublin as Chief Secretary.

123. At Dublin Swift resided; and there was much speculation about the way in which the Dean and the Secretary would behave towards each other. The relations which existed between these remarkable men form an interesting and pleasing portion of literary history. They had early attached themselves to the same political party and to the same patrons. While Anne's Whig ministry was in power, the visits of Swift to London and the official residence of Addison in Ireland had given them opportunities of knowing each other. They were the two shrewdest ob-

servers of their age. But their observations on each other had led them to favorable conclusions. Swift did full justice to the rare powers of conversation which were latent under the bashful deportment of Addison. Addison, on the other hand, discerned much good nature under the severe look and manner of Swift; and, indeed, the Swift of 1708 and the Swift of 1738 were two very different men.

124. But the paths of the two friends diverged widely. The Whig statesmen loaded Addison with solid benefits. They praised Swift, asked him to dinner, and did nothing more for him. His profession laid them under a difficulty. In the state they could not promote him; and they had reason to fear that, by bestowing preferment in the church on the author of the Tale of a Tub, they might give scandal to the public, which had no high opinion of their orthodoxy. He did not make fair allowance for the difficulties which prevented Halifax and Somers from serving him, thought himself an ill-used man, sacrificed honor and consistency to revenge, joined the Tories, and became their most formidable champion. He

soon found, however, that his old friends were less to blame than he had supposed. The dislike with which the Queen and the heads of the church regarded him was insurmountable; and it was with the greatest difficulty that he obtained an ecclesiastical dignity of no great value, on condition of fixing his residence in a country which he detested.

125. Difference of political opinion had produced, not indeed a quarrel, but a coolness between Swift and Addison. They at length ceased altogether to see each other. Yet there was between them a tacit compact like that between the hereditary guests in the Iliad: —

> Ἔγχεα δ ἀλλήλων ἀλεώμεθα καὶ δι' ὁμίλου·
> Πολλοὶ μὲν γὰρ ἐμοὶ Τρῶες κλειτοί τ' ἐπίκουροι,
> Κτείνειν, ὃν κε θεὸς γε πόρῃ καὶ ποσσὶ κιχείω,
> Πολλοὶ δ' αὖ σοὶ Ἀχαιοί, ἐναίρεμεν ὃν κε δύνηαι.

126. It is not strange that Addison, who calumniated and insulted nobody, should not have calumniated or insulted Swift. But it is remarkable that Swift, to whom neither genius nor virtue was sacred, and who generally seemed to find, like most other renegades, a peculiar pleasure in at-

tacking old friends, should have shown so much respect and tenderness to Addison.

127. Fortune had now changed. The accession of the house of Hanover had secured in England the liberties of the people, and in Ireland the dominion of the Protestant caste. To that caste Swift was more odious than any other man. He was hooted and even pelted in the streets of Dublin; and could not venture to ride along the strand for his health without the attendance of armed servants. Many whom he had formerly served now libelled and insulted him. At this time Addison arrived. He had been advised not to show the smallest civility to the Dean of St. Patrick's. He had answered, with admirable spirit, that it might be necessary for men whose fidelity to their party was suspected, to hold no intercourse with political opponents; but that one who had been a steady Whig in the worst times might venture, when the good cause was triumphant, to shake hands with an old friend who was one of the vanquished Tories. His kindness was soothing to the proud and cruelly wounded spirit of Swift; and the two great satirists resumed their habits of friendly intercourse.

128. Those associates of Addison whose political opinions agreed with his shared his good fortune. He took Tickell with him to Ireland. He procured for Budgell a lucrative place in the same kingdom. Ambrose Philips was provided for in England. Steele had injured himself so much by his eccentricity and perverseness, that he obtained but a very small part of what he thought his due. He was, however, knighted; he had a place in the household; and he subsequently received other marks of favor from the court.

129. Addison did not remain long in Ireland. In 1715 he quitted his secretaryship for a seat at the Board of Trade. In the same year his comedy of the Drummer was brought on the stage. The name of the author was not announced; the piece was coldly received; and some critics have expressed a doubt whether it were really Addison's. To us the evidence, both external and internal, seems decisive. It is not in Addison's best manner; but it contains numerous passages which no other writer known to us could have produced. It was again performed after Addison's death, and, being known to be his, was loudly applauded.

130. Towards the close of the year 1715, while the Rebellion was still raging in Scotland, Addison published the first number of a paper called the *Freeholder*. Among his political works the *Freeholder* is entitled to the first place. Even in the *Spectator* there are few serious papers nobler than the character of his friend Lord Somers, and certainly no satirical papers superior to those in which the Tory fox-hunter is introduced. This character is the original of Squire Western, and is drawn with all Fielding's force, and with a delicacy of which Fielding was altogether destitute. As none of Addison's works exhibits stronger marks of his genius than the *Freeholder*, so none does more honor to his moral character. It is difficult to extol too highly the candor and humanity of a political writer whom even the excitement of civil war cannot hurry into unseemly violence. Oxford, it is well known, was then the stronghold of Toryism. The High Street had been repeatedly lined with bayonets in order to keep down the disaffected gownsmen; and traitors pursued by the messengers of the government had been concealed in the garrets of several colleges. Yet the admoni-

tion which, even under such circumstances, Addison addressed to the university, is singularly gentle, respectful, and even affectionate. Indeed, he could not find it in his heart to deal harshly even with imaginary persons. His fox-hunter, though ignorant, stupid, and violent, is at heart a good fellow, and is at last reclaimed by the clemency of the king. Steele was dissatisfied with his friend's moderation, and, though he acknowledged that the *Freeholder* was excellently written, complained that the ministry played on a lute when it was necessary to blow the trumpet. He accordingly determined to execute a flourish after his own fashion, and tried to rouse the public spirit of the nation by means of a paper called the *Town Talk*, which is now as utterly forgotten as his *Englishman*, as his Crisis, as his Letter to the Bailiff of Stockbridge, as his Reader, in short, as everything that he wrote without the help of Addison.

131. In the same year in which the Drummer was acted, and in which the first numbers of the *Freeholder* appeared, the estrangement of Pope and Addison became complete. Addison had

from the first seen that Pope was false and malevolent. Pope had discovered that Addison was jealous. The discovery was made in a strange manner. Pope had written the Rape of the Lock, in two cantos, without supernatural machinery. These two cantos had been loudly applauded, and by none more loudly than by Addison. Then Pope thought of the Sylphs and Gnomes, Ariel, Momentilla, Crispissa, and Umbriel, and resolved to interweave the Rosicrucian mythology with the original fabric. He asked Addison's advice. Addison said that the poem as it stood was a delicious little thing, and entreated Pope not to run the risk of marring what was so excellent in trying to mend it. Pope afterward declared that this insidious counsel first opened his eyes to the baseness of him who gave it.

132. Now there can be no doubt that Pope's plan was most ingenious, and that he afterwards executed it with great skill and success. But does it necessarily follow that Addison's advice was bad? And if Addison's advice was bad, does it necessarily follow that it was given from bad motives? If a friend were to ask us whether

we would advise him to risk his all in a lottery of which the chances were ten to one against him, we should do our best to dissuade him from running such a risk. Even if he were so lucky as to get the thirty thousand pound prize, we should not admit that we had counselled him ill; and we should certainly think it the height of injustice in him to accuse us of having been actuated by malice. We think Addison's advice good advice. It rested on a sound principle, the result of long and wide experience. The general rule undoubtedly is that, when a successful work of imagination has been produced, it should not be recast. We cannot at this moment call to mind a single instance in which this rule has been transgressed with happy effect, except the instance of the Rape of the Lock. Tasso recast his Jerusalem. Akenside recast his Pleasures of the Imagination, and his Epistle to Curio. Pope himself, emboldened no doubt by the success with which he had expanded and remodelled the Rape of the Lock, made the same experiment on the Dunciad. All these attempts failed. Who was to foresee that Pope would, once in his life, be able to do what he

could not himself do twice, and what nobody else has ever done?

133. Addison's advice was good. But had it been bad, why should we pronounce it dishonest? Scott tells us that one of his best friends predicted the failure of Waverley. Herder adjured Goethe not to take so unpromising a subject as Faust. Hume tried to dissuade Robertson from writing the History of Charles the Fifth. Nay, Pope himself was one of those who prophesied that Cato would never succeed on the stage, and advised Addison to print it without risking a representation. But Scott, Goethe, Robertson, Addison, had the good sense and generosity to give their advisers credit for the best intentions. Pope's heart was not of the same kind as theirs.

134. In 1715, while he was engaged in translating the Iliad, he met Addison at a coffee-house. Philips and Budgell were there; but their sovereign got rid of them, and asked Pope to dine with him alone. After dinner, Addison said that he lay under a difficulty which he wished to explain. "Tickell," he said, "translated some time ago the first book of the Iliad. I have promised to look

it over and correct it. I cannot, therefore, ask to see yours, for that would be double-dealing." Pope made a civil reply, and begged that his second book might have the advantage of Addison's revision. Addison readily agreed, looked over the second book, and sent it back with warm commendations.

135. Tickell's version of the first book appeared soon after this conversation. In the preface, all rivalry was earnestly disclaimed. Tickell declared that he should not go on with the Iliad. That enterprise he should leave to powers which he admitted to be superior to his own. His only view, he said, in publishing this specimen was to bespeak the favor of the public to a translation of the Odyssey, in which he had made some progress.

136. Addison, and Addison's devoted followers, pronounced both the versions good, but maintained that Tickell's had more of the original. The town gave a decided preference to Pope's. We do not think it worth while to settle such a question of precedence. Neither of the rivals can be said to have translated the Iliad, unless indeed, the word translation be used in the sense which it

bears in the Midsummer Night's Dream. When Bottom makes his appearance with an ass's head instead of his own, Peter Quince exclaims, "Bless thee! Bottom, bless thee! thou art translated." In this sense, undoubtedly, the readers of either Pope or Tickell may very properly exclaim, "Bless thee! Homer; thou art translated indeed."

137. Our readers will, we hope, agree with us in thinking that no man in Addison's situation could have acted more fairly and kindly, both towards Pope, and towards Tickell, than he appears to have done. But an odious suspicion had sprung up in the mind of Pope. He fancied, and he soon firmly believed, that there was a deep conspiracy against his fame and his fortunes. The work on which he had staked his reputation was to be depreciated. The subscription, on which rested his hopes of a competence, was to be defeated. With this view Addison had made a rival translation; Tickell had consented to father it; and the wits of Button's had united to puff it.

138. Is there any external evidence to support this grave accusation? The answer is short. There is absolutely none.

139. Was there any internal evidence which proved Addison to be the author of this version? Was it a work which Tickell was incapable of producing? Surely not. Tickell was a fellow of a college at Oxford, and must be supposed to have been able to construe the Iliad; and he was a better versifier than his friend. We are not aware that Pope pretended to have discovered any turns of expression peculiar to Addison. Had such terms of expression been discovered, they would be sufficiently accounted for by supposing Addison to have corrected his friend's lines, as he owned that he had done.

140. Is there anything in the character of the accused persons which makes the accusation probable? We answer confidently — nothing. Tickell was long after this time described by Pope himself as a very fair and worthy man. Addison had been, during many years, before the public. Literary rivals, political opponents, had kept their eyes on him. But neither envy nor faction, in their utmost rage, had ever imputed to him a single deviation from the laws of honor and of social morality. Had he been indeed a man

meanly jealous of fame, and capable of stooping to base and wicked arts for the purpose of injuring his competitors, would his vices have remained latent so long? He was a writer of tragedy: had he ever injured Rowe? He was a writer of comedy: had he not done ample justice to Congreve, and given valuable help to Steele? He was a pamphleteer: have not his good nature and generosity been acknowledged by Swift, his rival in fame and his adversary in politics?

141. That Ticknell should have been guilty of a villany seems to us highly improbable. That Addison should have been guilty of a villany seems to us highly improbable. But that these two men should have conspired together to commit a villany seems to us improbable in a tenfold degree. All that is known to us of their intercourse tends to prove, that it was not the intercourse of two accomplices in crime. These are some of the lines in which Tickell poured forth his sorrow over the coffin of Addison: —

> "Or dost thou warn poor mortals left behind,
> A task well suited to thy gentle mind?

Oh, if sometimes thy spotless form descend,
To me thine aid, thou guardian genius, lend.
When rage misguides me, or when fear alarms,
When pain distresses, or when pleasure charms,
In silent whisperings purer thoughts impart,
And turn from ill a frail and feeble heart;
Lead through the paths thy virtue trod before,
Till bliss shall join, nor death can part us more."

142. In what words, we should like to know, did this guardian genius invite his pupil to join in a plan such as the editor of the *Satirist* would hardly dare to propose to the editor of the *Age?*

143. We do not accuse Pope of bringing an accusation which he knew to be false. We have not the smallest doubt that he believed it to be true; and the evidence on which he believed it he found in his own bad heart. His own life was one long series of tricks, as mean and as malicious as that of which he suspected Addison and Tickell. He was all stiletto and mask. To injure, to insult, and to save himself from the consequences of injury and insult by lying and equivocating, was the habit of his life. He published a lampoon on the Duke of Chandos; he was taxed with it; and he lied and equivocated. He published a lampoon

on Aaron Hill; he was taxed with it; and he lied and equivocated. He published a still fouler lampoon on Lady Mary Wortley Montague; he was taxed with it; and he lied with more than usual effrontery and vehemence. He puffed himself and abused his enemies under feigned names. He robbed himself of his own letters, and then raised the hue and cry after them. Besides his frauds of malignity, of fear, of interest, and of vanity, there were frauds which he seems to have committed from love of fraud alone. He had a habit of stratagem, a pleasure in outwitting all who came near him. Whatever his object might be, the indirect road to it was that which he preferred. For Bolingbroke, Pope undoubtedly felt as much love and veneration as it was in his nature to feel for any human being. Yet Pope was scarcely dead when it was discovered that, from no motive except the mere love of artifice, he had been guilty of an act of gross perfidy to Bolingbroke.

144. Nothing was more natural than that such a man as this should attribute to others that which he felt within himself. A plain, probable, coherent explanation is frankly given to him. He is certain

that it is all a romance. A line of conduct scrupulously fair, and even friendly, is pursued towards him. He is convinced that it is merely a cover for a vile intrigue by which he is to be disgraced and ruined. It is vain to ask him for proofs. He has none, and wants none, except those which he carries in his own bosom.

145. Whether Pope's malignity at length provoked Addison to retaliate for the first and last time, cannot now be known with certainty. We have only Pope's story, which runs thus. A pamphlet appeared containing some reflections which stung Pope to the quick. What those reflections were, and whether they were reflections of which he had a right to complain, we have now no means of deciding. The Earl of Warwick, a foolish and vicious lad, who regarded Addison with the feelings with which such lads generally regard their best friends, told Pope, truly or falsely, that this pamphlet had been written by Addison's direction. When we consider what a tendency stories have to grow, in passing even from one honest man to another honest man, and when we consider that to the name of honest man neither Pope nor the

Earl of Warwick had a claim, we are not disposed to attach much importance to this anecdote.

146. It is certain, however, that Pope was furious. He had already sketched the character of Atticus in prose. In his anger he turned this prose into the brilliant and energetic lines which everybody knows by heart, or ought to know by heart, and sent them to Addison. One charge which Pope has enforced with great skill is probably not without foundation. Addison was, we are inclined to believe, too fond of presiding over a circle of humble friends. Of the other imputations which these famous lines are intended to convey, scarcely one has ever been proved to be just, and some are certainly false. That Addison was not in the habit of "damning with faint praise" appears from innumerable passages in his writings, and from none more than from those in which he mentions Pope. And it is not merely unjust, but ridiculous, to describe a man who made the fortune of almost every one of his intimate friends, as "so obliging that he ne'er obliged."

147. That Addison felt the sting of Pope's satire keenly, we cannot doubt. That he was conscious

of one of the weaknesses with which he was reproached is highly probable. But his heart, we firmly believe, acquitted him of the gravest part of the accusation. He acted like himself. As a satirist he was, at his own weapons, more than Pope's match, and he would have been at no loss for topics. A distorted and diseased body, tenanted by a yet more distorted and diseased mind; spite and envy thinly disguised by sentiments as benevolent and noble as those which Sir Peter Teazle admired in Mr. Joseph Surface; a feeble, sickly licentiousness; an odious love of filthy and noisome images; these were things which a genius less powerful than that to which we owe the *Spectator* could easily have held up to the mirth and hatred of mankind. Addison had, moreover, at his command, other means of vengeance which a bad man would not have scrupled to use. He was powerful in the state. Pope was a Catholic; and, in those times, a minister would have found it easy to harass the most innocent Catholic by innumerable petty vexations. Pope, near twenty years later, said that, "through the lenity of the government alone he could live with comfort."

"Consider," he exclaimed, "the injury that a man of high rank and credit may do to a private person, under penal laws and many other disadvantages." It is pleasing to reflect that the only revenge which Addison took was to insert in the *Freeholder* a warm encomium on the translation of the Iliad, and to exhort all lovers of learning to put down their names as subscribers. There could be no doubt, he said, from the specimens already published, that the masterly hand of Pope would do as much for Homer as Dryden had done for Virgil. From that time to the end of his life, he always treated Pope, by Pope's own acknowledgment, with justice. Friendship was, of course, at an end.

148. One reason which induced the Earl of Warwick to play the ignominious part of tale-bearer on this occasion, may have been his dislike of the marriage which was about to take place between his mother and Addison. The Countess Dowager, a daughter of the old and honorable family of the Middletons of Chirk, a family which, in any country but ours, would be called noble, resided at Holland House. Addison had, dur-

ing some years, occupied at Chelsea a small dwelling, once the abode of Nell Gwynn. Chelsea is now a district of London, and Holland House may be called a town residence. But, in the days of Anne and George the First, milkmaids and sportsmen wandered between green hedges, and over fields bright with daisies, from Kensington almost to the shore of the Thames. Addison and Lady Warwick were country neighbors, and became intimate friends. The great wit and scholar tried to allure the young lord from the fashionable amusements of beating watchmen, breaking windows, and rolling women in hogsheads down Holborn Hill, to the study of letters and the practice of virtue. These well-meant exertions did little good, however, either to the disciple or to the master. Lord Warwick grew up a rake; and Addison fell in love. The mature beauty of the countess has been celebrated by poets in language which, after a very large allowance has been made for flattery, would lead us to believe that she was a fine woman; and her rank doubtless heightened her attractions. The courtship was long. The hopes of the lover appear to have risen and fallen

with the fortunes of his party. His attachment was at length matter of such notoriety that, when he visited Ireland for the last time, Rowe addressed some consolatory verses to the Chloe of Holland House. It strikes us as a little strange that, in these verses, Addison should be called Lycidas, a name of singularly evil omen for a swain just about to cross St. George's Channel.

149. At length Chloe capitulated. Addison was indeed able to treat with her on equal terms. He had reason to expect preferment even higher than that which he had attained. He had inherited the fortune of a brother who died Governor of Madras. He had purchased an estate in Warwickshire, and had been welcomed to his domain in very tolerable verse by one of the neighboring squires, the poetical fox-hunter, William Somerville. In August, 1716, the newspapers announced that Joseph Addison, Esquire, famous for many excellent works, both in verse and prose, had espoused the Countess Dowager of Warwick.

150. He now fixed his abode at Holland House, a house which can boast of a greater number of inmates distinguished in political and literary his-

tory than any other private dwelling in England. His portrait still hangs there. The features are pleasing; the complexion is remarkably fair; but in the expression we trace rather the gentleness of his disposition than the force and keenness of his intellect.

151. Not long after his marriage he reached the height of civil greatness. The Whig Government had, during some time, been torn by internal dissensions. Lord Townshend led one section of the Cabinet, Lord Sunderland the other. At length, in the spring of 1717, Sunderland triumphed. Townshend retired from office, and was accompanied by Walpole and Cowper. Sunderland proceeded to reconstruct the Ministry; and Addison was appointed Secretary of State. It is certain that the Seals were pressed upon him, and were at first declined by him. Men equally versed in official business might easily have been found; and his colleagues knew that they could not expect assistance from him in debate. He owed his elevation to his popularity, to his stainless probity, and to his literary fame.

152. But scarcely had Addison entered the Cabi-

net when his health began to fail. From one serious attack he recovered in the autumn; and his recovery was celebrated in Latin verses, worthy of his own pen, by Vincent Bourne, who was then at Trinity College, Cambridge. A relapse soon took place; and, in the following spring, Addison was prevented by a severe asthma from discharging the duties of his post. He resigned it, and was succeeded by his friend Craggs, a young man whose natural parts, though little improved by cultivation, were quick and showy, whose graceful person and winning manners had made him generally acceptable in society, and who, if he had lived, would probably have been the most formidable of all the rivals of Walpole.

153. As yet there was no Joseph Hume. The ministers, therefore, were able to bestow on Addison a retiring pension of fifteen hundred pounds a year. In what form this pension was given we are not told by the biographers, and have not time to inquire. But it is certain that Addison did not vacate his seat in the House of Commons.

154. Rest of mind and body seemed to have re-established his health; and he thanked God, with

cheerful piety, for having set him free both from his office and from his asthma. Many years seemed to be before him, and he meditated many works, a tragedy on the death of Socrates, a translation of the Psalms, a treatise on the evidences of Christianity. Of this last performance, a part, which we could well spare, has come down to us.

155. But the fatal complaint soon returned, and gradually prevailed against all the resources of medicine. It is melancholy to think that the last months of such a life should have been overclouded both by domestic and by political vexations. A tradition which began early, which has been generally received, and to which we have nothing to oppose, has represented his wife as an arrogant and imperious woman. It is said that, till his health failed him, he was glad to escape from the Countess Dowager and her magnificent dining-room, blazing with the gilded devices of the house of Rich, to some tavern where he could enjoy a laugh, a talk about Virgil and Boileau, and a bottle of claret with the friends of his happier days. All those friends, however, were not left to him. Sir Richard Steele had been gradually

estranged by various causes. He considered himself as one who, in evil times, had braved martyrdom for his political principles, and demanded, when the Whig party was triumphant, a large compensation for what he had suffered when it was militant. The Whig leaders took a very different view of his claims. They thought that he had, by his own petulance and folly, brought them as well as himself into trouble, and though they did not absolutely neglect him, doled out favors to him with a sparing hand. It was natural that he should be angry with them, and especially angry with Addison. But what above all seems to have disturbed Sir Richard, was the elevation of Tickell, who, at thirty, was made by Addison Undersecretary of State; while the editor of the *Tatler* and *Spectator*, the author of the Crisis, the member for Stockbridge who had been persecuted for firm adherence to the house of Hanover, was, at near fifty, forced, after many solicitations and complaints, to content himself with a share in the patent of Drury Lane Theatre. Steele himself says, in his celebrated letter to Congreve, that Addison, by his preference of Tickell, "incurred the warmest

resentment of other gentlemen;" and everything seems to indicate that, of those resentful gentlemen, Steele was himself one.

156. While poor Sir Richard was brooding over what he considered as Addison's unkindness, a new cause of quarrel arose. The Whig party, already divided against itself, was rent by a new schism. The celebrated bill for limiting the number of peers had been brought in. The proud Duke of Somerset, first in rank of all the nobles whose origin permitted them to sit in Parliament, was the ostensible author of the measure. But it was supported, and, in truth, devised by the Prime Minister.

157. We are satisfied that the bill was most pernicious; and we fear that the motives which induced Sunderland to frame it were not honorable to him. But we cannot deny that it was supported by many of the best and wisest men of that age. Nor was this strange. The royal prerogative had, within the memory of the generation then in the vigor of life, been so grossly abused, that it was still regarded with a jealousy which, when the peculiar situation of the House of Brunswick is

considered, may perhaps be called immoderate. The particular prerogative of creating peers had, in the opinion of the Whigs, been grossly abused by Queen Anne's last Ministry; and even the Tories admitted that her majesty in swamping, as it has since been called, the Upper House, had done what only an extreme case could justify. The theory of the English constitution, according to many high authorities, was that three independent powers, the sovereign, the nobility, and the commons, ought constantly to act as checks on each other. If this theory were sound, it seemed to follow that to put one of these powers under the absolute control of the other two was absurd. But if the number of peers were unlimited, it could not well be denied that the Upper House was under the absolute control of the Crown and the Commons, and was indebted only to their moderation for any power which it might be suffered to retain.

158. Steele took part with the Opposition, Addison with the ministers. Steele, in a paper called the *Plebeian*, vehemently attacked the bill. Sunderland called for help on Addison, and Addison

obeyed the call. In a paper called the *Old Whig*, he answered, and indeed refuted Steele's arguments. It seems to us that the premises of both the controversialists were unsound, that, on those premises, Addison reasoned well and Steele ill, and that consequently Addison brought out a false conclusion, while Steele blundered upon the truth. In style, in wit, and in politeness, Addison maintained his superiority, though the *Old Whig* is by no means one of his happiest performances.

159. At first, both the anonymous opponents observed the laws of propriety. But at length Steele so far forgot himself as to throw an odious imputation on the morals of the chiefs of the administration. Addison replied with severity, but, in our opinion, with less severity than was due to so grave an offence against morality and decorum; nor did he, in his just anger, forget for a moment the laws of good taste and good breeding. One calumny which has been often repeated, and never yet contradicted, it is our duty to expose. It is asserted in the *Biographia Britannica*, that Addison designated Steele as "little Dicky." This assertion was repeated by Johnson, who had never

seen the *Old Whig*, and was therefore excusable. It has also been repeated by Miss Aikin, who has seen the *Old Whig*, and for whom therefore there is less excuse. Now, it is true that the words "little Dicky" occur in the *Old Whig*, and that Steele's name was Richard. It is equally true that the words "little Isaac" occur in the Duenna, and that Newton's name was Isaac. But we confidently affirm that Addison's little Dicky had no more to do with Steele, than Sheridan's little Isaac with Newton. If we apply the words "little Dicky" to Steele, we deprive a very lively and ingenious passage, not only of all its wit, but of all its meaning. Little Dicky was the nickname of Henry Norris, an actor of remarkably small stature, but of great humor, who played the usurer Gomez, then a most popular part, in Dryden's Spanish Friar.[1]

[1] We will transcribe the whole paragraph. How it can ever have been misunderstood is unintelligible to us.

"But our author's chief concern is for the poor House of Commons, whom he represents as naked and defenceless, when the Crown, by losing this prerogative, would be less able to protect them against the power of a House of Lords. Who forbears laughing when the Spanish Friar represents little Dicky,

160. The merited reproof which Steele had received, though softened by some kind and courteous expressions, galled him bitterly. He replied with little force and great acrimony; but no rejoinder appeared. Addison was fast hastening to his grave; and had, we may well suppose, little disposition to prosecute a quarrel with an old friend. His complaint had terminated in dropsy. He bore up long and manfully. But at length he abandoned all hope, dismissed his physicians, and calmly prepared himself to die.

161. His works he intrusted to the care of Tickell, and dedicated them a very few days before his death to Craggs, in a letter written with the sweet and graceful eloquence of a Saturday's

under the person of Gomez, insulting the Colonel that was able to fright him out of his wits with a single frown? This Gomez, says he, flew upon him like a dragon, got him down, the Devil being strong in him, and gave him bastinado on bastinado, and buffet on buffet, which the poor Colonel, being prostrate, suffered with a most Christian patience. The improbability of the fact never fails to raise mirth in the audience; and one may venture to answer for a British House of Commons, if we may guess, from its conduct hitherto, that it will scarce be either so tame or so weak as our author supposes."

Spectator. In this, his last composition, he alluded to his approaching end in words so manly, so cheerful, and so tender, that it is difficult to read them without tears. At the same time he earnestly recommended the interests of Tickell to the care of Craggs.

162. Within a few hours of the time at which this dedication was written, Addison sent to beg Gay, who was then living by his wits about town, to come to Holland House. Gay went, and was received with great kindness. To his amazement his forgiveness was implored by the dying man. Poor Gay, the most good-natured and simple of mankind, could not imagine what he had to forgive. There was, however, some wrong, the remembrance of which weighed on Addison's mind, and which he declared himself anxious to repair. He was in a state of extreme exhaustion; and the parting was doubtless a friendly one on both sides. Gay supposed that some plan to serve him had been in agitation at court, and had been frustrated by Addison's influence. Nor is this improbable. Gay had paid assiduous court to the royal family. But in the Queen's days he had

been the eulogist of Bolingbroke, and was still connected with many Tories. It is not strange that Addison, while heated by conflict, should have thought himself justified in obstructing the preferment of one whom he might regard as a political enemy. Neither is it strange that, when reviewing his whole life, and earnestly scrutinizing all his motives, he should think that he had acted an unkind and ungenerous part, in using his power against a distressed man of letters, who was as harmless and as helpless as a child.

163. One inference may be drawn from this anecdote. It appears that Addison, on his death-bed, called himself to a strict account, and was not at ease till he had asked pardon for an injury which it was not even suspected that he had committed, for an injury which would have caused disquiet only to a very tender conscience. Is it not then reasonable to infer that, if he had really been guilty of forming a base conspiracy against the fame and fortunes of a rival, he would have expressed some remorse for so serious a crime? But it is unnecessary to multiply arguments and evidence for the defence, when there is neither argument nor evidence for the accusation.

164. The last moments of Addison were perfectly serene. His interview with his son-in-law is universally known. "See," he said, "how a Christian can die." The piety of Addison was, in truth, of a singularly cheerful character. The feeling which predominates in all his devotional writings is gratitude. God was to him the all-wise and allpowerful friend who had watched over his cradle with more than maternal tenderness; who had listened to his cries before they could form themselves in prayer; who had preserved his youth from the snares of vice; who had made his cup run over with worldly blessings; who had doubled the value of those blessings by bestowing a thankful heart to enjoy them, and dear friends to partake them; who had rebuked the waves of the Ligurian gulf, had purified the autumnal air of the Campagna, and had restrained the avalanches of Mont Cenis. Of the Psalms, his favorite was that which represents the Ruler of all things under the endearing image of a shepherd, whose crook guides the flock safe, through gloomy and desolate glens, to meadows well watered and rich with herbage. On that goodness to which he

ascribed all the happiness of his life, he relied in the hour of death with the love that casteth out fear. He died on the seventeenth of June, 1719. He had just entered on his forty-eighth year.

165. His body lay in state in the Jerusalem Chamber, and was borne thence to the Abbey at dead of night. The choir sang a funeral hymn. Bishop Atterbury, one of those Tories who had loved and honored the most accomplished of the Whigs, met the corpse, and led the procession by torchlight, round the shrine of Saint Edward and the graves of the Plantagenets, to the Chapel of Henry the Seventh. On the north side of that chapel, in the vault of the house of Albemarle, the coffin of Addison lies next to the coffin of Montague. Yet a few months, and the same mourners passed again along the same aisle. The same sad anthem was again chanted. The same vault was again opened; and the coffin of Craggs was placed close to the coffin of Addison.

166. Many tributes were paid to the memory of Addison; but one alone is now remembered. Tickell bewailed his friend in an elegy which would do honor to the greatest name in our litera-

ture, and which unites the energy and magnificence of Dryden to the tenderness and purity of Cowper. This fine poem was prefixed to a superb edition of Addison's works, which was published in 1721, by subscription. The names of the subscribers proved how widely his fame had been spread. That his countrymen should be eager to possess his writings, even in a costly form, is not wonderful. But it is wonderful that, though English literature was then little studied on the continent, Spanish grandees, Italian prelates, marshals of France, should be found in the list. Among the most remarkable names are those of the Queen of Sweden, of Prince Eugene, of the Grand Duke of Tuscany, of the Dukes of Parma, Modena, and Guastalla, of the Doge of Genoa, of the Regent Orleans, and of Cardinal Dubois. We ought to add that this edition, though eminently beautiful, is in some important points defective; nor, indeed, do we yet possess a complete collection of Addison's writings.

167. It is strange that neither his opulent and noble widow, nor any of his powerful and attached friends, should have thought of placing even a

simple tablet, inscribed with his name, on the walls of the Abbey. It was not till three generations had laughed and wept over his pages, that the omission was supplied by the public veneration. At length, in our own time, his image, skilfully graven, appeared in Poet's Corner. It represents him, as we can conceive him, clad in his dressing-gown, and freed from his wig, stepping from his parlor at Chelsea into his trim little garden, with the account of the Everlasting Club, or the Loves of Hilpa and Shalum, just finished for the next day's *Spectator*, in his hand. Such a mark of national respect was due to the unsullied statesman, to the accomplished scholar, to the master of pure English eloquence, to the consummate painter of life and manners. It was due, above all, to the great satirist, who alone knew how to use ridicule without abusing it, who, without inflicting a wound, effected a great social reform, and who reconciled wit and virtue, after a long and disastrous separation, during which wit had been led astray by profligacy, and virtue by fanaticism.

NOTES TO THE ESSAY ON MILTON.

Page 1, line 7. **office of Secretary.** Milton was Latin secretary to the Commonwealth from 1649–1660. His duties were to carry on in Latin the diplomatic correspondence between England and foreign powers.

1, 8. **the Popish Trials** took place on the discovery of the feigned Popish Plot, invented by Titus Oates in 1678. The **Rye-house Plot** was a Whig conspiracy to kill Charles II. It was discovered in time to prevent the murder, and several persons implicated were put to death.

1, 10. **Mr. Skinner**: not Cyriac Skinner, to whom Milton addressed *Sonnets xxi.* and *xxii.*, but his nephew, Daniel Skinner. After Milton's death he either took or sent the manuscript to Holland to have it published by Elzevir. The authorities interfered, however, and Elzevir gave up the manuscript to the Secretary of State, by whom it was pigeon-holed until it was quite forgotten. See *Garnett's Life*, pp. 190–1.

2, 1. **Wood and Toland.** Anthony à Wood gives a life of Milton in his *Athenæ Oxonienses*, 1691. John Toland also published a life of Milton in 1698.

2, 9. **the Oxford Parliament.** Charles II. in 1681

summoned Parliament to meet at Oxford as an appeal to the country against the disloyalty of the capital.

2, 16. Mr. Sumner was Royal Librarian and Chaplain to George IV.

3, 10. Pharisees. Macaulay here means persons scrupulously careful of outward form, exactness and beauty.

3, 16. Quintilian: a famous Roman teacher of rhetoric (35–96 A.D.). The quotation is from Milton's *Sonnet xi.*

3, 21. Sir John **Denham** (1615–1669), in his elegy on the poet Abraham Cowley (1618–1667), says —

> "Horace's wit, and Virgil's state,
> He did not steal, but emulate;
> And when he would like them appear,
> Their garb, but not their clothes, did wear."

4, 11. Arianism: the doctrines of Arius, an Alexandrian priest (4th century) who maintained that the Godhead consists of one eternal person, who in the beginning created, in his own image, a super-angelic being, his only begotten son by whom also he created the worlds. The first and greatest creature thus created through the Son of God, was the Holy Ghost. Arius thus denied the consubstantial nature of the persons of the Trinity.

4, 19-20. the eternity of matter, and . . . the Sabbath. "Matter is imperishable and eternal, because it is not only from God, but out of God." "The law of the Sabbath having been repealed, it is evident that no day of worship has been appointed in its place."

5, 4. Defensio Populi, "A Defense of the People of England," was a Latin prose work by Milton, written in justification of the execution of Charles I.

5, 16. Capuchins: an order of Franciscan monks, who

received their name from the *Capuche*, or hood, which they wore.

7, 13–15. **Johnson . . . clumsy ridicule.** Dr. Samuel Johnson, an 18th century lawgiver in literary matters, very harshly criticised Milton's poetry. For instance, of Milton's beautiful *Sonnet xxiii.*, he wrote: — "His wife died, and he honored her memory with a poor sonnet." Or of *Lycidas:* "The diction is harsh, the rhymes uncertain, the numbers unpleasing. Its form is that of a pastoral; easy, vulgar, and therefore disgusting." See Johnson's *Lives of the Poets.*

9, 3. **Mrs. Marcet** (1769–1858) wrote a text-book for children entitled *Conversations on Political Economy*, and other educational works on Chemistry and Natural Philosophy.

9, 5. **Montague** and **Walpole** were both great financiers of the 18th century. Montague first advised the establishment of the Bank of England.

9, 8. Sir Isaac **Newton** (1642–1727) was the foremost mathematician and natural philosopher of his time. Among his discoveries is the Law of Gravitation.

10, 16. The Earl of **Shaftesbury** (1671–1713) was the author of numerous publications concerning the workings of the human mind. He argued that persons can discern right and wrong by an inward sense, just as they see outward objects with the eye.

10, 17. **Helvetius**: (1715–1771) a French philosopher, author of "De L'Esprit," a work in which he tries to prove that feeling is the source of intellectual activity, and that the chief spring of all human conduct is self-interest.

10, 23. **Niobe**: was a Greek mythological character, celebrated for her pride in her twelve children who were slain by Apollo, because Niobe had made a slighting comparison be-

tween them and the two children of Leto. She was herself afterwards turned into stone by Zeus.

Aurora was the goddess of the dawn. She is usually represented as clothed in a rosy-yellow robe, with a star on her forehead and a torch in her right hand.

11, 5. **Fable of the Bees**, or *Private Vices made Public Benefits*, was a satire written by Bernard de Mandeville (1670–1733). Its moral is that "luxury is the root of all civilization."

11, 22. **the greatest of poets**: i.e., Shakspere. The quotation is from *Midsummer Night's Dream*, Act V., Sc. i.

13, 22. **The Greek Rhapsodists** were traveling minstrels, or professional reciters of poetry. See Plato's *Ion*, pp. 535, 536.

Plato: (B.C. 429–347) a Greek philosopher.

15, 11. **in our own time**. Macaulay probably alludes to the poets of the Lake school, — Wordsworth, Coleridge, and Southey.

15, 20. **Rabbinical literature**: literature composed by the Jewish Rabbis, and ranked by them as almost equal to that of the Bible.

16, 2. **Petrarch**. Francesca Petrarcha (1304–1374), an Italian lyric poet, best known for his Italian Sonnets, wrote among other things a Latin epic called *Africa*. He had little first hand knowledge of the classic authors, his Latin being chiefly mediæval.

16, 12. **Augustan**: the name applied to a period extending from a little before to a little after the reign of Augustus (B.C. 76–A.D. 4). During these years Rome reached her greatest eminence in art and literature. Ovid, Livy, Horace, and Virgil wrote during this period.

16, 23. Epistle to Manso: a poem in Latin hexameters, written by Milton to Manso, Marquis of Villa, who had entertained him when he visited Naples.

17, 10–13. The quotation is from *Paradise Lost*, IV. 551–554.

18, 23. **conductors.** Macaulay means that Milton brings to the mind images and ideas through the medium of his words, as swiftly and as easily as a good conductor carries electricity from place to place.

20, 7. **"Open Sesame."** Sesame is a kind of grain. See the tale of *Ali Baba and the Forty Thieves* in the *Arabian Nights*.

20, 8. John **Dryden** (1631–1700), a master of English verse and a cogent reasoner in rhyme, wrote, among other works, an opera called the *State of Innocence*. With Milton's permission he inserted into it some verses manufactured out of *Paradise Lost*. The piece is full of absurdities of his unintentional burlesque of Milton, whose style he could not well imitate.

21, 6. **lists:** the field or ground inclosed for combats at tournaments. **housings:** trappings or ornaments, usually of cloth, put on horses.

21, 21. **a stanza:** *Canto*, in the first edition.

22, 1. **lyric poems:** those which especially describe the poet's own thoughts and feelings, as opposed to dramatic or to narrative poems.

22, 10. **Lord Byron:** (1788–1824), a celebrated English poet, the greatest of whose poems is *Childe Harold's Pilgrimage*. The dramas here referred to are *Marino Faliero*, *Two Foscari*, *Manfred*, *Cain*, and *Werner*. In all his plays, Byron depicted only one character, and that character was Byron

himself. See Macaulay's review of Byron in the *Edinburgh Review*, 1830.

22, 19. Harold: the hero of Byron's *Childe Harold's Pilgrimage*.

23, 9. Æschylus: (B.C. 525–B.C. 456) is called the father of Greek tragedy. His best play, *Agamemnon*, has been admirably rendered into English verse by Robert Browning.

23, 15. Herodotus: (B.C. 484–B.C. 408), the oldest Greek historian. He often leaves the main thread of his history to speak in high terms of Egypt and Assyria.

23, 21. Pindar: (B.C. 522–B.C. 442) the great lyric poet of Greece.

24, 10. Sophocles: (B.C. 495–405) the second great master of Greek tragedy.

24, 16. Euripides: (B.C. 480–400) the last of the three great Greek tragedians. Macaulay in later life spoke less unfavorably of him. In his copy of Euripides' works he wrote: "I can hardly account for the contempt which I felt at school and college for Euripides. I own I like him better now than Sophocles."

25, 2. "sad Electra's poet: i.e., Euripides. See Milton's *Sonnet VIII.*

25, 4. Bottom. See *Midsummer Night's Dream*, Act IV., Sc. i. Bottom is represented as an ass, and is mistaken by the Queen of Faeries for a beautiful young man.

26, 4. Masque. A form of dramatic entertainment in which the actors frequently represented mythological characters, and in which the scenes were accompanied and embellished by music. They were very popular in the 16th and 17th centuries as written by Ben Jonson, Beaumont, Fletcher and Milton.

26, 7–8. **the Faithful Shepherdess**: a pastoral drama by John Fletcher (1579–1625).

26, 9. **the Aminta**: a poem by Tasso, the Italian poet (1544–1595). **Pastor Fido**, or the *Faithful Swain*, is the best poem of another Italian poet, Guarini (1537–1612).

27, 19. **Sir Henry Wotton**: (1568–1639), a poet, scholar and patron of letters, was an ambassador to Venice in the reign of James I., and later Provost of Eton school, where he became a neighbor of Milton. See Walton's *Lives*.

27, 20. **the tragical part**: i.e., the dialogue.

27, 21. **Dorique**: i.e., pastoral.

28, 7. **weeds**: garments. **Thyrsis** was the Shepherd whose form the attendant spirit assumed in *Comus*. The name is commonly given to shepherds in Greek pastoral poetry.

28, 10–11. The quotation is from *Comus*, 1012–1013.

28, 13. **Elysian**: pertaining to Elysium, the heaven of Greek mythology.

28, 16. **Hesperides**: in mythology the three daughters of Hesperus, who watched over the wonderful orchards in the far west which bore golden fruit.

28, 17. **several minor poems**: chief among which is *Lycidas*.

29, 15. **the Divine Comedy**: most important poem of Dante (1265–1321), the greatest of Italian poets.

29, 23. **hieroglyphics**. The picture-writings of the Mexican Indians were rude representations of the objects specified. The Egyptian hieroglyphics stood for letters and syllables as well as for objects. "Milton's words suggest ideas remote from themselves, and his descriptions are not intelligible unless you know the inner meanings of his words."

30, 22. **Adige**: a mountain stream of great force, rushing between the hills of the Brennar pass.

30, 23. **Phlegethon**: in Greek mythology a river of the lower regions; literally "the fire river."

30, 24. **St. Benedict**: near Naples.

31, 2. **Arles**: a town near the mouth of the Rhone, in France.

31, 13. **Teneriffe**: a peak about 1200 feet high on the largest of the Canary Islands. **Atlas** is a mountain of about the same height in Morocco.

31, 14. **Contrast with these.** See *Paradise Lost*, XI., 567, and *Inferno*, Canto XXIX.

32, 3. **lazar-house**: a hospital or pest-house.

32, 5. **Malebolge**: "A place in hell, all of stone, and of an iron color."

32, 14–15. **Valdichiana . . . Sardinia**: places in Italy that are especially unhealthy.

33, 8. **Barbariccia and Draghignazzo**: two foul fiends in Canto XXI., who delight in throwing unfortunate sinners into a pit of boiling pitch.

33, 9. **Lucifer**: the prince of devils. By climbing up his huge sides Dante managed to get out of hell. See Canto XXXIV.

33, 18. **Amadis**: the popular hero of a prose romance of chivalry, *Amadis de Gaul*, originally written in Portuguese. It was afterwards added to in French and Spanish translations. Amadis was a model of chivalry, and an ideal knight and king. **Gulliver**: the hero of *Gulliver's Travels*, a satirical work by Jonathan Swift (1667–1745).

36, 11. **Theism**: the belief in the existence of a god.

36, 15. Edward **Gibbon** (1737–1794) wrote the *History*

of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire. See chapter XV. for his five "causes."

37, 4–6. **Synagogue**: i.e., the Jews. **Academy**: i.e., a sect of philosophers headed by Plato, and taught by him in the garden of *Academos* in Athens. **Portico**: i.e., Stoic philosophers, pupils of Zeno, who taught under the Stoa Poecilé or Painted Portico in Athens. **Lictor**: the attendant of the highest Roman executive officers. He carried before him, to clear the way and lend dignity to his office, the *fasces* — an ax in a bundle of rods.

37, 11–12. **St. George**: the patron saint of England. **Mars**: the god of war. **St. Elmo**: the patron saint of Italian sailors. The electric light seen, in storms, playing about the masts of ships, is known as St. Elmo's fire. By the Romans these electric flashes were attributed to Castor and Pollux.

37, 14–15. **Cecilia . . . Venus . . . Muses.** Venus, the classic goddess of love, was held to have been the mother of the Roman people. St. Cecilia, martyred in 230 A.D., became the patron saint of church music, supplanting the nine muses, the goddesses of music, poetry, and other liberal arts, of the ancients.

40, 19. **Don Juan**: the hero of Mozart's opera, *Don Giovanni*, who having killed a man asks the statue of the dead adversary to dine with him. To his surprise the statue comes, and the two have a weird feast, at the close of which the spirit statue carries Don Juan off to hell.

40, 24. **Farinata**, who spoke to Dante from inside the burning tomb. See *Inferno*, Canto X.

41, 2. **auto da fé**: literally, an "act of faith." In Portugal and Spain it meant the burning alive of a heretic.

41, 4. **Beatrice** Portinari a maiden whom Dante first

met as a boy of nine. His love for her was so intense that it became the poetical inspiration of his life. He never married her, however, for she died while still very young. It was she who led him through Purgatory, as he relates in the *Divine Comedy;* who was his great love, his highest aspiration; all lower aims were "lesser loves." It was on account of these latter that Beatrice chided him.

41, 15. **Tasso**: (1544–1595) an Italian epic poet. See **26**, 9.

41, 16. **Klopstock**: (1724–1803) a German religious poet. In his poems, as in those of Tasso, the supernatural beings lack the delicacy of portrayal found in Milton.

42, 12. **Osiris**: the chief god of Egyptian mythology, and the supreme judge and ruler of the kingdom of the dead.

42, 13. **seven-headed idols**. In Hindu mythology the greater the number of the heads of the gods, the greater was their power.

42, 16. **Titans**: a race of giants who, in Greek mythology, reigned supreme before the coming of Jupiter. With him they warred, and by him were overthrown.

42, 18. **Prometheus**: one of the Titans who enraged Jupiter by making men of clay and then stealing fire from heaven with which to animate them. For this Jupiter punished him by chaining him to Mt. Caucasus, where eagles and vultures fed daily upon his liver, and he was not allowed to die.

43, 14. **Michael**: the prince of angels who fought against Satan when he rebelled.

45, 3. **the Hebrew poet**. Job x. 22.

45, 9. **portraits**. A fresco on a wall in the Bargello at Florence, said to have been painted by Giotto, is considered the best portrait of Dante.

46, 14. **Satyrs**: woodland deities, in Greek mythology, and later represented as monsters, half men, half goats. They were common attendants upon Bacchus.

47, 11. **time of life**: between fifty and sixty years.

47, 17. **Theocritus**: (cir. B.C. 280) the greatest Greek pastoral poet. **Ariosto**: (1474–1553) whose *Orlando Furioso* places him among the greatest poets of Italy.

48, 13. **Filicaja.** See Note, **164**, 20.

48, 21. **that beautiful face** refers to Milton's second wife, Catherine Woodcock. Macaulay, carried away by his enthusiasm, forgets that Milton was blind when he married her. See *Sonnet XXIII.* She is there veiled.

49, 2. **Anthology**: a large collection of the best Greek short poems by different authors and of different ages.

49, 5. **a collect in verse.** See *Sonnet XVIII.*

50, 2. **Oromasdes and Arimanes**: the good and the evil spirit of the Persian religion.

50, 9. **American forests** refers not merely to the great progress made in the Western States of North America, but more especially to the establishment of the South American republics of Colombia (1819), Peru (1821), Mexico (1823).

50, 10. **roused Greece.** When Macaulay wrote this Greece was engaged in a war of independence with Turkey, which she won in 1829.

51, 1. **the lion in the fable.** The fable is this: As a man and a lion were walking through a forest each boasting of his strength, they came upon a statue of a man strangling a lion. "See how strong man is," said the traveler, "and how he can overcome even the king of beasts." To this the lion answered, "If lions knew how to make statues you would see the man under the lion's paw."

53, 11. William **Laud** (1573–1645), Archbishop of Canterbury, was a great enemy of the Puritans and the champion of High Church and Ritualism.

54, 22. **One sect**: i.e., the Roman Catholics.

55, 1. **One part of the empire**: i.e., Ireland.

55, 10. **Divine Right**: i.e., of kings, the doctrine that the king stands toward his people *in loco parentis*, deriving his authority, not from the consent of the governed, but directly from God. This doctrine was especially developed under the Stuarts.

55, 14. **William**: i.e., William III., Prince of Orange.

55, 14, 15. **Somers and Shrewsbury**: Lord Chancellor and Secretary of State in the reign of William III.

55, 18. **Jacobite**: the name given to the adherents of James and his principles.

55, 20. **St. George's Channel**: the sea between England and Ireland.

56, 1. **Ferdinand the Catholic**: (1452–1516) Ferdinand V. of Spain.

56, 2. **Frederick the Protestant**: (1596–1632) Frederick V., Elector Palatine; head of the Protestant princes of Germany; son-in-law of James I.

56, 12. **Goldsmith's Abridgment.** Oliver Goldsmith (1728–1774), author of the *Vicar of Wakefield*, wrote an abridged history of England.

57, 16, 17. **from his accession to . . . the Long Parliament**: i.e., from 1625–1640. The Long Parliament is so called because it extended from 1640 to 1680, though it was temporarily suspended by Cromwell in 1653.

57, 23. **the Declaration of Right**: "a document asserting the ancient rights and liberties of the English people."

William and Mary were offered the crown on condition that they would truly observe all of its clauses.

58, 20. **The ship-money**: one of the many offensive taxes levied by Charles I. in order to raise money. Headed by John Hampden, the people made a firm stand against this grievance, and the tax was taken off.

58, 21. **The Star Chamber**: a court consisting of members of the Privy Council and two chief justices. It gradually usurped the power of punishing any real or imaginary contempt for the authority of the king; and its actions were extremely unjust, tyrannical, and often almost inquisitorial. It received its name from the room in which it met.

60, 2, 3. **the Petition of Right.** (1628). "A bill condemning Charles's illegal practices, arbitrary taxes, imprisonments," etc., and forbidding taxation without the consent of Parliament.

60, 22. **le Roi le veut**: i.e., the king wishes it. When bills are passed by Parliament it is the custom, even to-day, for the assent of the king to be given by an officer in these words. The use of French, instead of English, has survived from the 12th and 13th centuries, when French was the language of the Court.

62, 15. **Vandyke**: so called from a Flemish painter, Anthony Van Dyck (1599–1641), who resided in England during the latter years of his life, and made many portraits of Charles and his Court.

63, 15. **the Tudors**: sovereigns of England, so called from their ancestor, Owen Tudor, Earl of Richmond. They include Henry VII., son of Owen Tudor, Henry VIII., Edward VI., Mary and Elizabeth.

64, 13. The Earl of **Strafford** was a tool of Charles in

his tyrannical and arbitrary government. He was beheaded in 1641. See Browning's tragedy.

64, 22. **Fifth-monarchy men.** They belonged to a sect which sprang out of Puritanism, and believed that Christ was about to return again to the earth and establish his kingdom among men. They therefore believed themselves bound to prepare, by force if necessary, the way for his coming. The four other kingdoms were Assyria, Persia, Greece, and Rome.

64, 24. **Agag**: a cruel king of the Amalekites, whom Samuel hewed to pieces. See 1 Samuel, ch. xv. 33.

65, 7. **despotic sceptres.** In the first edition of this essay Macaulay wrote "the Sceptres of Brandenburgh and Braganza;" i.e., Prussia and Portugal.

66, 24. **the Rhine or the Xeres.** The valley of the Rhine is famous for its vineyards. Xeres is not a river but a town of Andalusia in Spain. The country about is noted for its wine. Sherry takes its name from this place.

70, 24. **Jeffreys**: a coarse and brutal judge, who lived in the reigns of Charles II. and James II. His name will ever be associated with the "Bloody Assizes," at which no less than 320 persons were condemned to death.

71, 3. **the Boyne**: a small river in the north of Ireland. The battle of the Boyne (1690), which practically put an end to the hopes of James II., was fought between William III. and Schomberg on one side, and James and Sarsfield on the other.

71, 18. **heir . . . nephew and his two daughters.** The first was the Pretender, who claimed the throne as James III., and led a rebellion in 1715. His nephew was William III., son of Mary, sister of James II. His two daughters were Mary, wife of William III., and Anne, queen of England after the death of William.

71. 21. **the fifth of November**: the day on which William III. landed in England, 1688.

72, 1. **the thirtieth of January**: the day on which Charles I. was executed, 1649. Both these days were formerly observed by the Church of England, but the services were taken out of the prayer book by command of Queen Victoria (1859).

73, 16. **Salmasius**: a French scholar authorized by Charles II. to write a defense of his father, Charles I. The book was called *Defensio Regis.* Milton was selected by the Commonwealth leaders to answer this book, which he did in his *Defensio Populi.* See *Sketch of Milton.*

73, 21. **Æneæ magni dextra,** (cadis). "Thou fallest by the right hand of the great Æneas." Vergil, Æn. x. 830.

75, 11. **stadtholder**: the chief governor of the Dutch Republic.

75, 21. **Bolivar** freed the South American colonies from Spanish misrule and oppression.

76, 22. **the Stuarts**: sovereigns of England from 1603–1688. They include, James I., Charles I., Charles II., and James II.

78, 8. **Independents**: seceders from the Presbyterians who were in favor of free and independent church worship and against a general church government for the country.

78, 20. **his rival**: i.e. Louis XIV. of France.

79, 5. **Anathema Maranatha.** The first word is Greek for "curse"; the second is Syriac for "our Lord cometh." Together they are used as a form of denunciation.

79, 7. **Belial and Moloch**: the devil and "the god of the Ammonites, to whom, in sacrifice, children were made to pass through fire."

80, 13. **Cromwell** was made Lord Protector in 1653, and died in 1658.

82, 1–4. See Tasso, *Jerusalem Delivered*, XV. 57 ff.

> "This is the source of laughter and this the stream
> Which contains mortal perils in itself:
> Now here to hold in check our desire
> And to be very cautious, becomes us."

82, 23. See Shakespeare's *Merchant of Venice*, Act. II., Sc. vii., Act II., Sc. ix., Act III., Sc. ii.

86, 1. **Beatific Vision**: a direct and face-to-face sight of God surrounded by his saints and angels and all the beauties and the glories of heaven.

86, 2. Sir Henry **Vane** (1613–1662) was a prominent politician, and a leader of the Parliamentary side during the Civil War. He was a mystic and fanatical Puritan given to extravagant speculations. In 1636–37 he was governor of Massachusetts Bay Colony. He was executed in 1662 by command of Charles II. as a regicide.

86, 4. Charles **Fleetwood**: a leader of the Parliamentary forces, who married Cromwell's daughter.

87, 2. **Stoics**: a sect that taught that man should never give way to any passion; should be unmoved alike by happiness or sorrow. See note on p. 37, ll. 4–6.

87, 8. **Sir Artegal's iron man Talus**: A brazen man made by Vulcan to guard the island of Crete. Spenser (*Faerie Queene*, Bk. V.) makes him the attendant of Artegal (who impersonates Justice), and depicts him as constantly running around the island administering correction and chastisement to offenders by flooring them with an iron flail.

87, 24. **crusades**: the religious wars waged in the 11th,

12th, and 13th centuries by the Christian kings and nations of Europe against the Mohammedans of the East. These wars were undertaken not only to rescue the Holy Land from the Saracens, but also as penances for sins. The word is derived from "crux" a cross, under which badge the Christians fought.

88, 1. **Dunstan**: Archbishop of Canterbury, *circa* 959. He was famous for his austerity, intolerance, his efforts to put the Anglo-Saxon church under the power of Rome, and for his influence over Edgar, his king. **De Montfort**: a French nobleman, father of Simon de Montfort, famous for his cruel crusade in 1238, against the Albigenses who attempted to break from the church of Rome. **Dominic**: (1170–1271) a Spaniard who founded the Dominican order of monks, called also Black-Friars. Like De Montfort he was austere and cruel, and took severe measures to punish heretics.

88, 2. **Escobar**: (1589–1669) a Spanish Jesuit and writer upon morals. Macaulay undoubtedly refers to the strictness and austerity of his life.

88, 13. **doubting Thomases**. See *St. John* xx., 24.

88, 14. **careless Gallios**. See *Acts* xviii. 17.

88, 20. **Brissotines**, afterwards called Girondists, were advocates of moderation in the French Revolution, led by J. Pierre Brissot. They were defeated and their leader executed in the Reign of Terror of 1793.

89, 7. **Whitefriars**: a district of London, so-called from a monastery of the White-Friars established there in 1241.

89, 15. **Cavaliers**: i.e., the adherents of Charles I.

89, 19. **Janissaries**: the militia of Turkey. It is said that they were at first children stolen from Christian parents. Later they became the body-guard of the sultan. In 1826 they had become so formidable and uncontrollable that they were abolished.

90, 9. **Duessa.** See Spenser's *Faerie Queene*, (Bk. I.) Duessa (or Falsehood) was a witch who assumed the character and appearance of Una (signifying Truth) and enticed her champion, the Red-Cross Knight, into the House of Pride where she held him prisoner.

90, 23. **the Round Table**: the table at which King Arthur and his knights were accustomed to sit and hold solemn feasts. (Read Tennyson's "Idylls of the King" for a most beautiful version of the old romances of King Arthur and his knights.)

91, 12. **conventicle**: i.e., an assembly. It was especially applied to the secret meetings for religious worship held by the Scottish Covenanters and the dissenters, when they were persecuted for their faith in the reign of Charles II. **Gothic cloister** here stands for monastery or abbey.

91, 20. From Milton's *Sonnet VII.*, on his twenty-third birthday.

92, 19–20. **hero of Homer**: Ulysses, hero of the *Odyssey*, who when sailing by the cave of the Sirens, had himself bound to the mast of the ship so that he might enjoy their songs and beauty without being drawn by them to his death.

92, 24. **Circe** was an enchantress who had power to change into animals all who entered her palace and drank of her cup. She thus transformed twenty-two of Ulysses' followers into swine; but he himself she was powerless to change, for Mercury had given him a magic herb which made him proof against her cup.

93, 9. **in the Penseroso.** Read the twelve beautiful lines, beginning: —

> "But let my due feet never fail
> To walk the studious cloisters pale."

93, 16. **Othello,** the hero of Shakspere's play of the same name, led by Iago to believe Desdemona, his wife, untrue, murdered her, though he loved her truly, because he thought his honor demanded this satisfaction.

93, 23. **hierarchy**: the body of persons in whom is confided the government of sacred things. It means here the clergy of the church of England.

94, 10. **the liberty of the press.** See Milton's *Areopagitica*, a noble defense of this liberty.

95, 1–5. The quotation is from *Comus*, 815–819.

95, 18. **the Presbyterian wolf.** See Milton's *Sonnet to Cromwell.*

> "Help us to save free conscience from the paw,
> Of hireling wolves, whose gospel is their maw."[1]

95, 22. **frontlets**: strips of parchment inscribed with certain texts from the Old Testament, and inclosed in a small leather case which was fastened with a strap, and worn by the Jews on the forehead just above and between the eyes. See Exod. xiii. 16; Deut. vi. 8, and xi. 18.

97, 3. **regicide.** The first edition adds: "He ridiculed the Eikon."

97, 5. **the god of light**: i.e., Phœbus, who describes his climbing up against the contrary motion of the swift-moving world in the lines "Nitor in adversum," etc. "I struggle against opposition; nor can I be conquered by the force which conquers all else; against the swift motion of the heavens I ride on." See Ovid's *Metamorphoses* II., 72, 73.

97, 15. Edmund **Burke**: (1729–1797) an English political writer and a powerful orator, whose prose is famous for its splendor and force.

[1] Maw, i.e., stomach.

97, 23. **"a seven-fold chorus,"** etc. The quotation is from Milton's *The Reason of Church Government urged against Prelacy*. Book II. For criticisms of Milton's style see essays on Milton by Arnold and Lowell.

98, 5, **the Iconoclast,** or *Image Breaker*, was written by Milton in answer to a work attributed to Charles I., entitled *Eikon Basilike*, or *Portrait of his sacred Majesty in his Solitudes and Sufferings.*

98, 7. **the Treatise** and **the Animadversions** were two of Milton's pamphlets of the year 1641, written in favor of the abolition of episcopacy.

99, 14. Thomas **Ellwood**: (1639–1713) a firm friend of Milton in his old age, and a frequent visitor at his house, where he used often to read to the blind old poet. In 1665 Milton showed him the manuscript of *Paradise Lost.* After reading it at leisure, at his own house, Ellwood returned it to Milton saying, — "Thou hast here said much of Paradise Lost but what hast thou to say of Paradise found?" It was to this question, says Milton, that we owe *Paradise Regained.*

100, 1. **Boswellism.** James Boswell was an intimate friend and the biographer of Dr. Samuel Johnson. Boswell worshipped his hero to the verge of weakness, and his biography, though masterly, is often weak through blind devotion and flattery.

100, 14. **the Virgin Martyr.** Philip Massinger (1583–1640), an Elizabethan dramatist, wrote among other plays one called the *Virgin Martyr*, in which an unbeliever mocks the faith of the heroine who is martyred for her belief, and challenges her to send down a flower from the heaven whither she asserts she is going. This she does, for after her death an angel brings upon the stage a basket of flowers and fruit.

NOTES TO THE ESSAY ON ADDISON

WHIGS AND TORIES. — As these two political parties are so frequently mentioned by Macaulay in this essay, the student would do well to consult Lecky's *History of England in the XVIII. Century*, vol. i., ch. 1. He says in part: "The main object of the Whig party in the early part of the eighteenth century was to establish in England a system of government in which the will of the people as expressed by Parliament should be supreme, and the power of the monarch should be subject to the limitations it imposed. The substitution of a parliamentary title for divine right as the basis of the throne, and the assertion of the right of the nation to depose a dynasty which had transcended the limits of the constitution, were the great principles for which the Whigs were contending. . . . The Tory party, on the other hand, under Queen Anne was to a great extent, and under George I. almost exclusively Jacobite. The overwhelming majority of its members held fervently the doctrines of the divine right of kings and of the sinfulness of all resistance, and they accordingly regarded the power of Parliament as altogether subordinate to that of a legitimate king."

103. Lucy Aikin (1781–1864) made her reputation chiefly

by her historical works, which were *Memoirs of the Court of Queen Elizabeth* 1818; *Memoirs of the Court of King James I.*, 1822; *Memoirs of the Court of Charles I.*, 1833; and *The Life of Joseph Addison*, 1843.

103, 14. the **courteous knight** refers to Rogero, a character in Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso*, who was forced to fight a duel with Bradamante, a woman disguised as a man. To avoid hurting her he exchanged his magic sword "Balisarda" for one less deadly.

104, 18. **Laputan flapper.** See *Gulliver's Travels* by Swift, Part III., chap. ii. In the flying island of Laputa, Gulliver found the people so absent-minded by reason of deep thinking that it was customary for the great men of the country to employ boys, carrying "flappers" made of bladders, to strike them on the head, and so arouse them when their attention was required.

105, 10. **Theobald's** was a palace near London used as a residence by Burleigh, Lord High Treasurer under Queen Elizabeth, and later as a private hunting seat by James I.

105. 11. **Steenkirks**: large, loose neckties. After the defeat of the French at the battle of Steenkirk (1692), these ties became popular in England, and were worn to commemorate the negligent dress of the French officers who had been taken by surprise.

105, 13. **Hampton**: Hampton Court Palace, about twelve miles from London.

106, 7. **a hundred and twenty years.** Addison died in 1719. **Westminster Abbey**: in London, built by Edward the Confesor in 1049–65. It was rebuilt by Henry III. and Edward I., and now stands substantially as they left it. The abbey contains the tombs of most of England's sovereigns,

besides those of a host of other celebrated persons. The last great honor that England can pay her dead is to bury them within the walls of Westminster Abbey.

106, 18. Thomas **Parnell**: (1679–1718) a minor poet of the reign of Queen Anne, whose chief work is *The Hermit.*

106, 19. Hugh **Blair**: (1718–1800) a Scotch preacher, and an 18th century authority on rhetoric. His criticisms, especially those in connection with the genuineness of Ossian's poems, were faulty.

106, 20. **Johnson** wrote a tragedy called *Irene.* See note to Milton, **7,** 13.

106, 21. **high department of literature**: i.e., the writing of essays, such as the papers of the *Tatler* and the *Spectator.*

107, 6. **Button's,** a London coffee-house frequented by Addison, Steele, Pope, Swift, and other wits and literary men of their time. Letters were frequently left here for the *Spectator*, being dropped into the mouth of a lion erected to receive them.

108, 15. **Wild of Sussex**: formerly an immense forest in the south-eastern part of England.

108, 17. **Dunkirk**: a town in north-eastern France which Charles II. sold to Louis XIV. in 1661.

108, 19. **Tangier,** the port of Morocco, was given to Charles II. as part of the dower of Catharine of Braganza, in 1662.

109, 11. **Rabbinical Learning**: the teaching of the Talmud and of the Jewish law.

109, 16. the **Revolution**: i.e., of 1688, when William of Orange ascended the English throne.

109, 19. John **Tillotson**: (1630–1694) Archbishop of Can-

terbury in 1691. He had a seat in the Council, and was King William's chief adviser in matters of church government.

109, 24. **Charter House**: a celebrated London school founded in 1611. It was removed to Surrey in 1687.

110, 22. **Magdalene College** (pronounced Maudlin), the wealthiest of the twenty-three colleges that go to make up Oxford University.

111, 6, 7. **his chancellor**: judge Jeffreys. See Macaulay's *History*, vol. iii., ch. 8.

111. 13. **a Papist.** The right of electing a president lay with the Fellows of the college, and a Roman Catholic was ineligible. John Hough, Bp. of Coventry, had been elected by the Fellows; but he and they were expelled by James II., who appointed a Roman Catholic, one Anthony Farmer, to be president. Not insisting, however, on the appointment of Farmer, James ordered Parker, Bp. of Oxford, to be installed president, and appointed twelve Romanists as Fellows.

112, 12. **Demies**: students who hold scholarships at Magdalene College. At all other Oxford colleges the holders of scholarships are called "scholars." The word "Demy" is abbreviated from "demi-socius," a half-fellow.

113, 10. **Lucretius**: (B.C. 95–51) a Roman philosopher and poet. **Catullus**: (B.C. 87–47) a writer of epigrams and love poems. **Claudian**: (b. about A.D. 365) the last of the classic Latin poets.

113, 11. **Prudentius**: (b. A.D. 348) one of the earliest Christian poets.

113, 17. George **Buchanan**: (1506–1582) a native of Scotland, renowned as an historian and a writer of Latin poetry. He taught both in Scotland and on the Continent, and was at one time tutor to Mary Queen of Scots.

114, 8, 9. **Eton and Rugby**: celebrated English schools.

114, 14. Notice the five arguments that Macaulay gives to prove that Addison's knowledge of Greek and of Latin prose was not large. Mr. Courthope ("English Men of Letters," Addison, p. 28) disagrees with Macaulay in regard to Addison's knowledge of Greek.

114, 16. **Metamorphoses**: the chief poetical work of Ovid (B.C. 43–A.D. 17). It comprises 15 books, which are mainly devoted to the love episodes of the gods.

114, 20. **Statius**: (45–96) a Latin poet, author of *Thebais*, an epic poem in 12 books.

115, 1. **Pentheus**, king of Thebes, opposed the worship of Bacchus. In revenge the god caused him to be torn in pieces by his mother and two aunts who discovered him secretly watching them as they worshipped. Both Theocritus, a Syracusan pastoral poet born about B.C. 290, and Euripides (B.C. 480), one of the three great Greek tragedians, relate this story of Pentheus.

115, 13. **Ausonius** (b. A.D. 310) and **Manilius** were Latin poets.

115, 22. **Hannibal**: (B.C. 247–183), the famous Carthaginian general, who, with 59,000 soldiers, unsuccessfully attempted to capture Rome. After crossing the Pyrenees, his army had been reduced by hardships and by attacks from the enemy to barely 26,000 men.

115, 24. **Polybius**: (B.C. 204–122) a Greek historian.

116, 1. **Livy**: (B.C. 59–A.D. 17) the celebrated Roman historian, whose chief work is *Historiæ, or Annales Rerum Romanorum ab Urbe condita*, in 142 books. **Silius Italicus** (A.D. 25–100) wrote an epic poem on the Second Punic War.

116, 3. **Plutarch** (d. A.D. 120) wrote the lives of eminent

Greeks and Romans. In his life of Cæsar he describes his crossing of the Rubicon.

116, 4. **the Commentaries**: i.e., of Cæsar, which are noted for their clearness and the purity of their Latin.

116, 5. **letters to Atticus**: i.e., from Cicero.

116, 12. **Pindar** (B.C. 520–B.C. 450) and **Callimachus** (B.C. 256) were Greek poets.

116, 14. **Horace**: (B.C. 65) a celebrated Latin poet and a friend of Virgil, Augustus, and Mæcenus. **Juvenal**: (about A.D. 80) the last Roman poet of distinction.

117, 15. **Cock-Lane ghost.** A certain house in Cock-Lane, London, was supposed to have been haunted by a ghost, but upon investigation it was found that the spirit was nothing more than a little girl at play. See Foster's *Life of Goldsmith.*

117, 16. *Vortigern and Rowena* was a play purporting to be Shakspere's, forged by Samuel William Ireland (1777–1835).

117, 17. **Thundering Legion.** In the battle between Marcus Aurelius and the Quadi and Marcomanni A.D. 174, a legion composed of Christians in the Imperial Roman army, suffering severely from want of water, fell on their knees and prayed for rain. Immediately a thunder-storm broke over them, and not only supplied the necessary water, but caused great damage to the enemy. Hence this legion was afterward called the Thundering Legion.

117, 18. **Tiberius**: (B.C. 42–A.D. 37) second emperor of Rome.

117, 20. **Agbarus**, was said by Eusebius, an early Christian father, to have received a letter from Christ.

118, 5. **Herodotus.** See note to **23**, 15.

118, 8. Charles **Boyle**, Earl of Orrery (1676–1731), published an edition of the *Letters of Phalaris*, in 1695.

118, 19. Sir Rich. **Blackmore** (d. 1729) was a physician and a voluminous writer of prose and verse most of which was poor.

119, 1. Richard **Bentley** (1662–1742) was head of Trinity College, Cambridge, and an eminent philologian. He engaged in a controversy with Boyle, and proved beyond doubt, in his *Dissertation on the Epistles of Phalaris*, that these Epistles were written not in the sixth century B.C., as was believed, but in the second century A.D. This work, published in 1699 marks the beginning of a new era in scholarship.

119, 21. **breakfast tables**: a reference to the *Spectator*, the daily paper which Addison and Steele started March 1, 1712. **Swift.** See note to **33**, 18.

120, 2. **Lilliput**: one of the imaginary countries visited by Gulliver in his travels. Its inhabitants were dwarfs.

120, 11–14.

> "High in the midst the chieftain dwarf was seen,
> Of giant stature and imperial mien;
> Full twenty inches tall he strode along,
> And viewed with lofty eye the wondering throng."

120, 18. **coffee-houses**, in the 18th century, took the place of modern clubs. In these houses, whose number was enormous, the wits, literary men, and politicians met daily to drink their cup of coffee and talk over the topics of the day.

120, 22. John **Dryden** (1631–1700) was a celebrated English dramatic and satiric poet, and poet-laureate from 1668–1688. Addison in a short poem complimented him on the excellence of his translation of Virgil (1697). See note to **20**, 8.

121, 4. **Congreve**: (1670–1729), one of the most brilliant and witty of the Restoration dramatists. Montagu, lord of the Treasury, was his earliest patron.

121, 11. **fourth Georgic.** Virgil's Georgics, four in number, deal with farm and agricultural subjects.

121, 16. **the Newdigate Prize**, so called after its founder, Sir Roger Newdigate, is given yearly at Oxford for the best poem in English verse by an undergraduate, on an assigned subject.

121, 17. **the Seatonian prize** is given yearly at Cambridge for the best poem in English verse, on a sacred subject.

121, 18. **heroic couplet:** iambic pentameter lines in rhymed pairs, as, —

> "Know then thyself, presume not God to scan,
> The proper study of mankind is man."

122, 5. Alexander **Pope** (1688–1744) was the most eminent poet and satirist of the classical school of the 18th century. Most of his works are written in the heroic couplet. His *Pastorals* appeared in 1709.

122, 16, 17. **Rochester** (1648–1680), **Marvel** (1621–1678, and **Oldham** (1653–1683) wrote at times in the heroic couplet, but their lines, compared with those of Pope, are decidedly harsh.

122, 19. **Ben Jonson:** (1573–1637) one of the greatest of English dramatists. John **Hoole** (1727–1803) translated into English verse Tasso's *Jerusalem Delivered* and Ariosto's *Orlando Furioso*.

123, 1. **Brunel** (1806–1859) was an eminent civil engineer who designed the famous ship, the "Great Eastern." The allusion here is to a machine invented by him for turning out blocks, for pulleys of exactly the same shape and size.

123, 5. Æneid, IV., 178 ff.

125, 4. **"After his bees."** The culture of bees forms the subject of the fourth Georgic.

125, 14–15. **an honorable place.** Dr. Addison was at this time Dean of Lichfield. **Montague**: See note to **9**, 5.

126, 1. Charles Sackville, Earl of **Dorset** (1638–1706), besides being a courtier and a patron of letters, wrote some very good songs and satires.

126, 4. **Rasselas.** The story is told in *Rasselas*, 1759, the only novel written by Dr. Johnson.

127, 4. John **Somers**: (1651–1716) a distinguished Whig statesman who became chancellor at the time of the Revolution, having strenuously opposed James II.

128, 3. **Revolution of July 1830.** This French revolution drove out Charles X. and put Louis Philippe on the throne.

128, 6–7. **At the present moment**, i.e., 1843.

128, 16, 17. **Somersets and Shrewsburies.** Charles Seymour, Duke of Somerset (1660–1748), and Charles Talbot, Duke of Shrewsbury (1660–1717) were both eminent statesmen and influential patrons of men of letters. The meaning of the line is that France "had no great houses to counterbalance literary talent," or perhaps that in France literary men were freer from patrons who used their talents for political purposes and thus kept down their best productions.

129, 5. **peace of Ryswick**, signed at Ryswick in Holland in 1697, was a treaty between France on one side, and England, Germany, Spain, and Holland on the other, one clause of which stipulated that Louis XIV. should recognize William III. as King of England.

130, 20. **a toast.** "A word applied in Addison's time to a reigning beauty, whose health it was the fashion to drink." See *The Tatler*, No. 24.

130, 24. **Kit Cat Club**: a Whig club in London, said to have taken its name from Christopher Katt, a pastry cook who kept the house. It was the custom for members of the club, in drinking a toast, to compose some lines in her honor, which were then engraved upon the wine glasses. Addison thus toasted the Countess of Manchester.

131, 10. Jean **Racine**: (1639–1699) one of the greatest French dramatists. Before 1677 he wrote several plays of which the best are "Andromaque" and "Britanicus." In 1689 he began to write sacred plays, and produced "Esther" and "Athalie."

131, 12. André **Dacier**: (1651–1722) a celebrated French scholar who edited some of the classics for the Dauphin. **Athanasian mysteries**: a reference to the Athanasian creed still used on certain days in the Church of England. Dacier, who had becomc a Roman Catholic, was trying to find in Plato a confirmation of his belief in this creed.

132, 3. **Joseph Spence**: (1699–1768) an English divine, at one time professor of poetry, and later of history, at Oxford. He is now chiefly remembered as the collector of a volume of valuable anecdotes of prominent men he had met.

132, 13. **Guardian**: a periodic paper written by Steele and Addison after the close of the *Spectator*. See Nos. 101 and 104.

132, 23. Nicolas de **Malebranche** (1638–1715) was a distinguished French theologian and philosopher.

132, 24. Nicholas **Boileau**: (1636–1711) a French literary lawgiver. He first studied law, then theology, and finally became a man of letters and a great critic. His chief work is *L'Art Poétique*, a treatise on literary criticism which exerted a great influence on English taste.

133, 1. **Newton**: See Note **9**, 8.

133, 2. Thomas **Hobbes** (1588–1679) was one of the earliest of English philosophers. He held that power or "force was the only foundation of right," and that, therefore, absolute power should be given to one person in order to hold others in check. His system of philosophy is embodied in his great work called the *Leviathan.*

133, 22. **Leicester square**, in London. **Sir Joshua** Reynolds (1723–1792) was the first president of the British Royal Academy, and is generally considered the foremost portrait painter of England.

133, 23. **Mrs. Thrale** (1741–1821), better known as Mrs. Piozzi, was a friend of Dr. Johnson. At her house at Streatham, a suburb of London, Johnson had a room for sixteen years, set apart for his use. See Boswell's *Life of Johnson* under the years 1778 and 1782.

133, 24. Christopher Martin **Wieland** (1733–1813) was a distinguished German poet and Professor of Philosophy and Literature at the University of Erfurt and later of Weimar. Besides writing poetry and philosophical romances, he translated Shakspere into German.

134, 1. Gotthold Ephraim **Lessing** (1729–1781) was not only an eminent German critic, but a distinguished dramatist as well. His chief plays are "Minna von Barnhelm," "Emilia Galotti," and "Nathan der Weise." His literary and art criticisms and ideas are embodied in his *Laocoön* or "Treatise on the limits of Painting and Poetry," 1765.

135, 11. **Augustine age**. See note to **16**, 12.

135, 16. **Pollio** (B.C. 76–A. D.4), a friend of Virgil and Horace, was an eminent orator of the Augustine age.

135, 19. **Frederick the Great** of Prussia (1712–1786)

not only was a patron of the great French writers, Voltaire, Diderot, and others, but even wrote his own works almost entirely in French.

136, 5. Disiderius **Erasmus**: (1467–1536) a great Dutch theologian and a fine writer of Latin. He was one of the most learned men of his time; and though he took no very active part in the Reformation of the Church, he was one of the leaders in the Revival of Learning.

136, 6. Girolamo **Fracastorius**. (1483–1553) an Italian physician and poet whose best works are poems written in very elegant Latin.

136, 6, 7. William **Robertson** (1721–1793) was a Scotch historian, whose best work, written in clear, straightforward English, is the well known *History of Charles V.*

136, 13. Thomas **Gray** (1716–1771), an English poet who wrote chiefly odes and elegies, the most famous of which is the *Elegy written in a Country Church-yard.*

136, 13. **elegiacs**, i.e., couplets of alternate hexameter and pentameter lines.

136, 14. **Vincent Bourne** (1695–1747) was a very clever English writer of Latin poems, whose verse Cowper ranked with that of Ovid.

136, 18–22. "Do not think, however, that I wish by that to find fault with the Latin verses (which you sent me) of one of your illustrious academicians. I found them very beautiful and worthy of Vida and of Sannazar, but not of Horace and of Virgil."

137, 2. **Père Fraguier**: (1666–1728) a Parisian Jesuit and a man of considerable learning.

137, 12–14. "Why, Muse, doest thou bid me, born of a Sigambrian father, far on this side of the Alps, to lisp in Latin numbers?"

137, 16, 17. **Machinæ Gesticulantes** (Marionettes) and **Gerano-Pygmæomachia** (Battle of the Cranes and Pygmies) are two Latin poems by Addison.

138, 15. **an event**, which led up to the war of the Spanish succession in 1700.

139, 16. **Ligurian coast**: the coast of Italy from near Marseilles to Genoa.

140, 3. **capuchin**. See note to **5**, 16.

140, 8. **"How are thy servants," etc.** See *Spectator* No. 489. The first stanza is as follows:

> "How are thy servants blest, O Lord!
> How sure is their defence!
> Eternal wisdom is their guide,
> Their help Omnipotence."

140, 17. **Book of Gold**: i.e., register of Nobles.

141, 5. **the Carnival**, extends nominally from January 7, to Ash Wednesday.

141, 11. **Cato** (b. B.C. 95), a Roman general and **Scipio** his second in command, both joined with Pompey in the war against Cæsar. At the battle of Thapsus, when Pompey was defeated, Cato killed himself.

141, 16. **a Plutarch and a Tasso**. It should be remembered that the first of these authors was born A.D. 45, and the other A.D. 1544.

142, 24. **St. Peter's**: the great Roman Catholic Cathedral of the Vatican, rebuilt between 1505 and 1626 from designs by Michel Angelo and others.

143, 1. **the Pantheon**: built B.C. 27 by Agrippa, and in 1610 consecrated a church by Pope Boniface IV.

143, 2. **Holy Week**: i.e., the week before Easter, which

in Rome is marked by magnificent ceremonies in all the churches.

143, 18. **Appian Way**: a road between Rome and Capua, so called because begun about 313 B.C. by Appius Claudius Cæcus.

143, 22. **Herculaneum**: an immense theatre accommodating 8,000 people, built at the foot of Mt. Vesuvius. It was burned, together with the city of **Pompeii**, by the eruption of the volcano in 79. The city was discovered in 1689; the theatre in 1711. See Bulwer-Lytton's novel, *The Last Days of Pompeii.*

143, 24. **Pæstum**: a town on the coast, south of Pompeii, noted for three beautiful Doric temples.

144, 5. **Salvator** Rosa: (1615–1673) a distinguished Italian landscape and historical painter.

144, 6. **Vico**: (1668–1744) an Italian philosopher who is credited with having first taught the philosophy of history.

144, 8, 9, **Cities . . . of Yucatan**. More than sixty ruined cities dating from pre-historic times have been found in the wilds of Yucatan, a district in the south-east of Mexico.

144, 11. **Tunnel of Posilipo**: an excavation near Naples in the solid volcanic soil. Its east entrance was near the tomb of Virgil.

144, 12. **Capreæ**, i.e., an island near Naples.

144, 18. **Philip V.**, king of Spain, 1700.

144, 19. **Castile and Aragon**, provinces of Spain.

145, 3. **Jacobitism**, the principles of those who adhered to James II. and the Stuart family after his abdication. "They vindicated the doctrine of passive obedience and non-resistance."

145, 3, 4. **Freeholder**: a political periodical written by Addison, 1716.

145, 9. **Felucca**: a small two-masted vessel, propelled either by sails or oars, used in the Mediterranean.

145, 11. **Misenus** was the trumpeter and steersman of Æneas, who was drowned and buried at this headland, now called Cape Misena. See Virgil, Æneid VI., 162 and 235. **Circe**. See note to 92, 24.

145, 23. **Ostia**: the port of Rome at the mouth of the Tiber.

145, 23. **poured forth . . . gratitude**. See Note to **25**, 10.

146, 12. **Duke of Shrewsbury**. He was chamberlain of James II. and Secretary of State under William III. in 1689. In 1690 he entered into a secret engagement with the Jacobites. In 1696 his treason of 1690 was discovered. He was forgiven by King William, but retired first to the country and then to Italy. Under Queen Anne he became ambassador to France.

147, 7. Prince Francis **Eugene** of Savoy (1663–1736), who won distinction in 1697 at the battle of Zentha when the Austrians with whom he fought defeated the Turks, and again during the war of the Spanish succession when in 1701 he defeated **Catinat**, a French Marshal commanding the army in Italy, and drove the French out of Italy. In 1704 he fought in the allied army with Marlborough at the famous battle of Blenheim.

147, 10. **The faithless Ruler of Savoy** was Victor Amadeus II., who in 1692 commanded the Austrian troops against France, but being bribed went over to Louis XIV. In 1703 he again went back to the Austrians.

147, 14. the Grand Alliance of England, Austria, Holland, Denmark and Sweden, against France, to prevent the union of the crowns of France and of Spain in one person.

147, 18. Mont Cenis: in the Alps. Napoleon made a road over it in 1802.

148, 14. the death of Dryden: i.e., 1700. Pope's **Essay on Criticism**, 1709.

149, 17. the death of William: i.e., Mar. 8, 1702.

149, 22. deprived of the seals: i.e., lost his office.

150, 5. He became tutor. This statement seems to be an error. It is not known who the young English traveller was. Addison had been making arrangements to act as tutor and companion to Lord Hertford, son of the Duke of Somerset, but through a misunderstanding the plan came to nothing.

151, 13. Sidney, Earl of **Godolphin** (1645–1712) was treasurer under James II., William III., and Anne. In her reign he became Lord High Treasurer, but was abruptly dismissed from office in 1710.

151, 13. John Churchill, Duke of **Marlborough** (1650–1722) was one of the most famous generals of modern times. In the war of the Spanish succession he won four great victories over the French, the greatest of which was that of Blenheim in 1704, when he utterly routed the French under Marshall Tallard. He was in high favor with Anne until 1712. Both he and Godolphin were Tories.

151, 20–21. the privileges . . . to Dissenters. In 1689 was passed the Toleration Act, providing that all penalties for absence from the established church and for attending conventicles be withdrawn.

153, 2. George **Canning** (1770–1827). In 1807 and again in 1822 he was Secretary of Foreign Affairs, and in 1827 became

Prime Minister. In politics he was a liberal Tory ; but when he was chosen Prime Minister he was deserted by many of the more ardent Tories, among them Lord Eldon and Lord Westmoreland, and he found himself obliged to support a series of Whig measures, and to resort to the help of the Whigs to form a ministry.

153, 4. **Nottingham** and **Jersey** were members of the Council in the reign of Anne and George I. Both were extreme Tories, and both were dismissed from the council when the moderate Tories came into power in 1704.

153, 9. **Somers, Halifax, Sunderland**, and **Cowper**, on the other hand, were Whigs. Sunderland, son-in-law of the Duke of Marlborough, was a member of the Whig cabinet that fell in 1710. When, in 1717, he was made First Lord of the Treasury he appointed Addison Secretary of State.

153, 24. **Act of Settlement.** By this act of 1701, the succession to the English throne was secured to Sophia, electress of Hanover, and to her heirs who, however, must be Protestants, thus making it impossible for the Pretender, or any other of the house of Stuart, to become a ruler of Great Britain.

154, 9. **Newmarket**: a fashionable race-course.

156, 7. **Haymarket**: a street in the west of London which took its name from the market of hay held there from the days of Queen Elizabeth to the beginning of the eighteenth century.

156, 17. **the poem.** It was entitled *The Campaign.*

156, 20. **similitude of the Angel.**

> "'Twas then great Marlboro's mighty soul was prov'd,
> That, in the shock of charging hosts unmov'd,
> Amidst confusion, horror and despair,
> Examin'd all the dreadful scenes of war;

In peaceful thought the field of death survey'd,
To fainting squadrons sent the timely aid,
Inspir'd repuls'd battalions to engage,
And taught the doubtful battle where to rage.
So when an angel by divine command,
With rising tempests shakes a guilty land,
Such as of late o'er pale Britannia's past,
Calm and serene he drives the furious blast;
And pleased the Almighty's orders to perform,
Rides in the whirlwind and directs the storm."

157, 10. **first great poet**: Homer.

158, 15. **Troy**: an ancient town on the coast of Asia Minor, near the entrance to the Hellespont and between the rivers Scamander and Simois. **Lycia**: a province of Asia Minor, whose people came to the rescue of Troy against the attack of the Greeks.

158, 19. **Sidonian fabric.** The town of Sidon in Phœnicia was in ancient days famed for the quality of its metal works.

158, 20. **Thessalian breed.** Thessaly, in the north of Greece, was so famed for its horses, that a likeness of a horse was stamped on the coins of the province.

158, 23–24. **Life-guardsman Shaw**; a noted prize-fighter who enlisted in the army, and fought with great courage at the battle of Waterloo.

159, 3. **the Mamelukes**: a body of Egyptian soldiers who were originally Turkish slaves. They became so powerful that from 1254–1517 they usurped the supreme power, and from their own ranks elected the sultans of Egypt. Under **Mourad Bey** they still retained much power when Napoleon's army occupied Egypt.

159, 18. **a great struggle.** The Second Punic War (B.C.

219–B.C. 201), between the Carthaginians under Hannibal and Hasdrubal, and the Romans under the two Scipios, Fabius Maximus and Marcellus. At the battle of Metaurus (B.C. 209), Livius and Nero, two consuls, defeated the Carthaginians.

160, 9. **the Boyne.** See note to **71**, 3.

160, 11. **John Philips:** (1676–1709) a minor English poet. In 1705 he wrote a poem in praise of Marlborough, entitled *Blenheim*. See Johnson's *Lives of the Poets*.

163, 7. **Empress Faustina.** There were two empresses, mother and daughter, of this name who lived about A.D. 150, and who were notorious for their immorality. The younger was the wife of Marcus Aurelius.

164, 1–3. **Dante . . . Machiavelli.** Italian poets, writers, and statesmen of renown who lived between A.D. 1265 and 1500. Dante (1265–1321) is the greatest of Italian poets, and his most celebrated work is the epic poem *The Divine Comedy*. Machiavelli (1469–1527) was a distinguished statesman and writer. To him justice and humanity were nothing; everything was good if it was expedient. For this reason his name has become a synonym for deceit and perfidy.

164, 4. **Ariosto:** (1474–1533) an Italian poet to whose *Orlando Furioso* Macaulay alluded on **103**, 14. **Ferrara** is in Northern Italy.

164, 7. **Valerius Flaccus and Sidonius Apollinaris** two minor Latin poets.

164, 10. **Martial:** (43–103) a well-known Roman epigrammatic poet.

164, 12. **Santa Croce:** a church at Florence where many illustrious Italians, among them Galileo and Michael Angelo, are buried.

164, 15. **Francesca da Rimini:** an Italian lady of the

13th century who was forced by her father to marry a man she did not love. She was unfaithful to her husband, who thereupon killed her and her lover, who proved to be his own brother. Dante made her the heroine of a portion of his *Inferno*. See Canto V.

164, 20. **Vincenzio Filicaja**: (1642–1707) his odes and sonnets on the expulsion of the Turks from Vienna rival those of the other great Italian sonnet writer, Petrarch.

165, 14. Nicholas **Rowe**: (1674–1718) an English dramatist, and the fifth poet-laureate.

165, 19. **Doctor Arne** (1710–1778), besides setting Addison's piece to music in 1733, composed the air for *Rule Britannia*.

166, 9. **The Great Seal**: i.e., Lord Chancellorship.

166, 12. **Electoral Prince of Hanover**: subsequently George I.

166, 23. Robert **Harley**: (1661–1724) Earl of Oxford, statesman, patron of letters, and a collector of books. He held many important offices, such as speaker of the House of Commons, 1701; Secretary of State, 1708; Chancellor of the Exchequer, 1710; and Lord High Treasurer, 1711. In the reign of George I. he was accused of treason, and sent to the Tower of London, but was later acquitted.

167, 2. **Duchess of Marlborough** (1660–1744), Sarah Jennings, was for many years the favorite of Queen Anne, and exerted the greatest influence over her. In 1710, however, as a result of a quarrel with Anne, she was supplanted by Abigail Hill.

167, 4. **Captain General**: Duke of Marlborough.

167, 10. Henry **Sacheverell**: (1672–1724) a High Church divine, who in 1709 preached two sermons, one at Derby, the

other at St. Paul's, London, ridiculing the Whig ministry, and denouncing the Revolution. The Whigs foolishly convicted him of libel, and suspended his preaching for three years. His trial contributed a little to the defeat of the Whig party at the next election in 1710.

167, 16. Thomas, Marquis of **Wharton**: (1648–1715) an eminent Whig statesman, who with others advanced the proposals for inviting over William of Orange.

168, 14, 15. **Talbot, Russell,** and **Bentinck** are respectively the Earl of Shrewsbury, the Duke of Bedford, and the Duke of Portland.

168, 17. William Pitt, Earl of **Chatham** (1708-1778), was one of England's greatest statesmen and orators, who will be remembered by Americans as a strong opponent of the harsh coercive measures passed by Parliament at the beginning of the War of Independence. See Macaulay's *Essay on Chatham.*

168, 17. Charles James **Fox** (1749–1806) was perhaps the greatest orator of his time. He was an admirer of Napoleon, and opposed to the war with France. In 1782 he was leader of the Whigs. He was also twice a foreign ambassador.

168, 23. **Censorship of the Press.** The last Act forbidding the publication of any book or paper without the consent of the licenser appointed by the crown, expired in 1695.

168, 24. **the time**: i.e., 1771.

169, 8. **The Conduct of the Allies** (1711) was a tract written by Swift, in which he supported Harley and discredited Godolphin. It attempted to show that the war benefited only the allies and the English general.

170, 6. Robert **Walpole** (1676–1745), was prime minister

from 1715–1717, and again practically so from 1721–1742. See Macaulay's *Essay on William Pitt, Earl of Chatham:* and Thackeray's *Four Georges.*

170, 6. William **Pulteney** Earl of Bath (1684–1764) was at first a Whig and a follower of Walpole, but later became his enemy, and joined Bolingbroke in publishing a paper called the *Craftsman,* which violently opposed Walpole and his administration. Upon the fall of Walpole, in 1742, Pulteney was offered the office of Prime Minister, but refused it.

170, 13. **Grub Street,** now Milton Street, London, was long the home of party scribblers, poor poets, and writers of libellous pamphlets.

170, 23. Henry **St. John,** Viscount Bolingbroke (1678–1751), a prominent statesman, orator, and philosopher, who in 1704 became Secretary of State, and in 1710 Foreign Minister. On the accession of George I. he was impeached, because of his Jacobite tendencies, and fled to France. Though later he returned to England, he held no public offices.

171, 10–11. **his cassock and his pudding sleeves:** i.e., because he was in holy orders.

172, 14. **Nemesis:** the Greek goddess of vengeance.

172, 23. Lady **Mary** Wortley-**Montague** (1689–1762), a beautiful and brilliant literary woman of the 18th century, and a great favorite of the Whigs, is best remembered for her letters, remarkable for their style and good judgment, written to the most celebrated men and women of her time. She was the wife of Edward W. Montague, ambassador to Turkey, and a cousin of Henry Fielding the great novelist.

173, 6. **Stella** was the name by which Swift called Hester Johnson, a woman with whom he was in love throughout his life, and with whom he kept up an elaborate correspondence.

173, 8. Richard **Steele** (1672–1729), essayist, dramatist, and politician, will forever be associated with Addison as joint author of the *Tatler* and the *Spectator*. See Macaulay's description of him on page 178.

173, 11. **Terence** and **Catullus**. Latin poets, the one noted for his style, the other for his wit.

173, 14. Edward **Young** (1683–1765), a gloomy and serious poet, is now remembered by his *Night Thoughts*.

174, 8. **criticisms on Mr. Softley's sonnet**. See *Tatler*, No. 163.

174, 9. **dialogue with the politician**. See *Spectator*, Nos. 567, 568.

174, 22. **St. Paul's**: the cathedral church of London.

176, 18. **Boswell**. See note to **100**, 1. William **Warburton** (1698–1779), bishop of Gloucester, was an ardent admirer of Richard **Hurd** (1720–1808), and wrote his life.

177, 1, 2. **Eustace Budgell**: (1686–1737) a miscellaneous writer who contributed about thirty-seven papers to the *Spectator*. Before drowning himself in the Thames, he wrote on a slip of paper: "What Cato did and Addison approved, cannot be wrong."

177, 20. **Ambrose Philips** (1675–1749) wrote *Pastorals*, a tragedy entitled *The Distressed Mother*, and many of the papers of the *Freethinker*, which he established. See *Tatler*, No. 12; *Spectator*, Nos. 290 and 335; *Guardian*, No. 40.

178, 2. **Thomas Tickell** (1686-1740), a poet, translator, and politician, was associated with Addison in a few numbers of the *Spectator*, wrote an *Elegy* on his death, and published an edition of his works.

178, 24. **spunging-house**: "the bailiff's house, where persons arrested for debt were lodged for twenty-four hours,

before being taken to jail, so as to allow their friends an opportunity to settle their debts."

179, 14. Richard **Savage** (1698–1743), a mediocre and dissipated poet, for a short time an intimate friend of Johnson. See Johnson's *Lives of the Poets.*

180, 2, 3. **Dr. Harrison.** See note to **204**, 15.

180, 23. Pierre **Bayle** (1647–1706), a French sceptic, who edited a *Dictionnaire historique et critique*, embodying his sceptical views on all subjects. Addison is said to have had this book constantly by him.

181, 9. Thomas **Tickell.** See note to **178**, 2.

181, 17. **the rival bulls.** See Virgil's *Georgics III.*, 220–225.

181, 19. **Wharton.** See note to **167**, 16.

182, 3. **Budgell.** See note to **177**, 1, 2.

184. Gazetteer. An official who publishes news by authority.

184, 13. **Sunderland.** See note to **153**, 9.

184, 24. **Will's and the Grecian.** Coffee-houses. See note to **120**, 18.

185, 2. **pasquinades.** Satires, lampoons.

185, 24. **Paul Pry, or Mr. Samuel Pickwick.** Pry is a character in one of Poole's once popular plays. Pickwick is the hero of Dickens's *Pickwick Papers.*

186, 2. **Partridge.** Swift had diverted London by predicting the death of Partridge, and then, on the day set, announcing his death and the circumstances attending it. Poor Partridge was indignant, but foolishly kept insisting in his Almanac that he was not dead.

187, 1. **St. George's Channel.** The sea between England and Ireland.

187, 14. Sir William **Temple** (1628–1699). A statesman and patron of men of letters, who is best remembered for negotiating the Triple Alliance. Swift, as a young man, acted as his private secretary.

187, 18. **Horace Walpole** (1717–1797), son of Robert Walpole, was a voluminous writer, but is now chiefly remembered for his romance called *The Castle of Otranto*.

187, 19. **half German jargon**: an allusion to the style of Carlyle in his translations of *Wilhelm Meister*, etc.

187, 25. **Meander**: (about B.C. 300) a Greek dramatist of whose comedies, supposed to have numbered upwards of 100, only fragments are extant.

188, 2. Abraham **Cowley** (1618–1667) was formerly considered a clever and delightful poet, but is little read now. Samuel **Butler**: (1612–1680) a great wit but a small poet. His *Hudibras* is a clever burlesque and satire on the Puritans and Independents.

188, 4. **Sir Godfrey Kneller**: (1646–1723) portrait-painter of the court of James II.

188, 19. Edward Hyde, Earl of **Clarendon** (1608–1674) was Chancellor of the Exchequer and Lord Chancellor respectively under Charles I. and Charles II. He wrote a *History of the Great Rebellion*, which, though faulty as a work of history, shows Clarendon's great skill in the delineation of character.

188, 24. **Cervantes** (1547–1616), the most celebrated of Spanish writers, wrote the world-famed novel *Don Quixote*.

189, 14. François Marie Arouet de **Voltaire** (1694–1778), prolific French writer, who, besides works on science, philosophy, and history, wrote a number of dramas and poems.

190, 16. **Jack Pudding**: a coarse, vulgar fellow, a stage buffoon.

191, 2. **Abbé Coyer** (1707–1782) wrote several unimportant works, but this letter, a forgery of Voltaire's style, became celebrated. **Pansophe** was a fictitious personage.

191, 4, John **Arbuthnot** (1667–1735) was Queen Anne's physician, a politician and a patron of letters. He was a friend of Pope and Swift, and being himself a man of great wit and wisdom, frequently, says Wharton, gave hints to those writers. See Pope's *Epistle to Dr. Arbuthnot.*

191, 10ff. **The World, the Connoisseur . . . . the Mirror, . . the Lounger** — were periodical essay papers of the 18th century, conducted on the plan of Addison's and Steele's *Tatler* and *Spectator.*

192, 8. **Mephistopheles**: an evil spirit, ranking next to Satan. He plays a conspicuous part both in Marlowe's *Dr. Faustus* and Goethe's *Faust.*

192, 10. **Puck**: a mischievous, merry little fairy in Shakspere's *Midsummer Night's Dream.* **Soame Jenyns**: (1704–1787) a minor poet and witty miscellaneous writer, author of a poem called *The Art of Dancing* and *A Review of the Internal Evidences of Christianity.*

193, 12. **Bettesworth**: an Irish victim of Swift's bitter satire. See the *Yahoo's Overthrow.* **Franc de Pompignan** (1709–1784) was so fiercely satirized by Voltaire that he was forced to retire from Paris to the country.

193, 24. **Jeremy Collier**: (1650–1726) a courageous nonjuring bishop, who in 1698 published *A Short View of the Profaneness and Immorality of the English Stage.*

194, 2. George **Etherege** (1635–1691) was a licentious playwright, whose best known plays are *Love in a Tub*, *She Would if She Could*, and *The Man of Mode.*

194, 3. William **Wycherley** (1640–1716) was a brilliant,

witty, though profligate poet and dramatist. His best plays are *Love in the Wood*, *The Country Wife*, and the *Plain Dealer*.

194, 12. **Congreve**. See note to **121**, 4.

194, 12. Sir John **Vanbrugh** (1664–1726) was a witty but licentious playwright, contemporary with Wicherley and Congreve. He was also an architect, and built Blenheim Palace, the residence of the Duke of Marlborough.

195, 3ff. **Tom Folio**, etc. For these sketches, see the *Tatler*, Nos. 155, 158, 163, 250, 220, 249, 254.

195, 12, George **Smalridge**, (1663–1719), an eminent divine and preacher, was Bishop of Bristol from 1714–1719.

195, 17. **Sacheverell** See note to **167**, 16.

196, 11. **a war**, etc.: i.e., the war of the Spanish succession (1700–1714).

196, 18ff. **Outbreaks . . . in 1820 and in 1831**: i.e., the Peterloo Massacre, August, 1819. In 1831 there were several serious riots, during one of which the town of Bristol was burnt. These riots were the outcome of discussions on the Reform Bill.

197, 6. **Versailles and Marli**. Palaces not far from Paris.

197, 7. **the Pretender**: i.e.: son of James II. See note to **71**, 18.

197, 8. **Harley**. See note to **166**, 23.

197, 10. **Sunderland**. See note to **153**, 9.

197, 16. **Godolphin**. See note to **151**, 13.

197, 17. **White Staff**: i.e., the badge of office carried by the lord treasurer.

198, 24. **the government**, etc.: i.e., Lord North's government (1770–1782).

199, 3. **Walcheren**: an island near the coast of Holland. In 1809 an expedition of 40,000 men was sent from England to destroy the docks and shipping of Antwerp. It was found that the French were there in such great numbers that the attempt had to be given up, though Flushing was taken. 1600 men were left in Flanders, but more than half of them died in the swamps.

199, 13. **a great lady**: i.e., the Countess of Warwick.

200, 23. **the Whig Examiner**: was a political periodical (No. 1, Sept. 14, 1710) written in opposition to Swift's *Examiner*.

201, 18. Ambrose **Philips**. See note to **177**, 20.

202, 6. **Isaac Bickerstaff**: i.e., Steele. See page 54, l. 1. foll.

203, 10ff. **Will's**, etc. See note to **120**, 18.

204, 5. **Will Honeycomb**. See *Spectator*, No. 2.

204, 14. Samuel **Richardson** (1689–1761) rose from the position of typesetter and printer to be ranked as one of the greatest of England's early novelists. He won fame and popularity first by the publication, in 1740, of a novel called *Pamela*, which he surpassed in 1749 by *Clarissa Harlowe*.

204, 15. Henry **Fielding** (1707–1754) is considered the greatest of England's early novelists. His *Tom Jones* is even thought by many critics to be the best piece of prose fiction in the English language.

204, 16. Tobias George **Smollett** (1721–1771) was a novelist, historian, and poet. His chief novels are *Roderick Random*, *Humphrey Clinker*, *and Peregrine Pickle*. He wrote also a "History of England." His poetry has little merit.

205, 3. **Mohawks**: the name given to ruffians, and often dissipated men of rank, who went about the streets of London

after nightfall, and insulted and injured unprotected people. See *Spectator*, Nos. 324, 335, 347.

205, 5. **the Distressed Mother**: a play by Ambrose Philips. See *Spectator*, No. 335.

205, 8. **jack**: a young pike.

206, 2. **three-sevenths**. Of the entire 635 numbers of the *Spectator*, Addison wrote 274.

206, 17. **Lucian**: (about A.D. 120–200) a Greek writer.

206, 19. **Scheherezade** was the wife of the Sultan Schahrich and the teller of the *Arabian Nights*.

206, 20. **La Bruyère**: (1645–1696) a French writer who has wonderfully depicted character in his *Characters in the Manner of Theophratus*.

206, 23. **Horatian pleasantry**. Horace (B.C. 64–B.C. 7), a clever and satirical Latin poet.

207, 3. Jean Baptiste **Massillon** (1663–1742) was a distinguished French preacher.

207, 10. **the Abbey**. See note to **106**, 7. See also *Spectator*, Nos. 26 and 329. **the Exchange**. Read *Spectator*, Nos. 69, 317, 159, 343, 517.

208, 6. **Chevy Chase**. Read *Spectator*, Nos. 70 and 74.

208, 12. **stamp tax**: of one penny (2 cents) on each half sheet was imposed in 1713.

208, 20. **bohea**: a kind of tea.

209, 2. **the population of England** was then (1712) about 6,000,000.

209, 10. **books on farriery**: i.e., on doctoring and shoeing horses.

209, 15. **At the close of 1712**. The *Spectator* ceased with No. 555, Dec. 1, 1712. It was resumed again, June 18, 1714, with No. 556, and continued to No. 600, Sept. 29, 1714.

210, 3. **the Guardian.** See note to **132**, 13. **Nestor Ironsides** was the assumed name under which Steele wrote the *Guardian*. He posed as the guardian of the Lizard family.

210, 13. **his Cato.** This play, dealing with the death of M. Porcius Cato, and with his opposition to Julius Cæsar, was first acted in 1713.

211, 12. William Charles **Macready**: (1793–1873) one of England's greatest actors. He was manager of Drury Lane Theatre from 1841 to 1843.

211, 13. **Juba** and **Marcia** are characters in the play.

211, 18. Barton **Booth** (1681–1733) was considered the foremost actor of his time.

211, 21. **the pit**: the middle and back of the ground floor. In English theatres the pit is one of the cheapest places from which to view a performance.

211, 22. **Inns of Court** were the residences of young lawyers and law students.

212, 2. **Jonathan's and Garraway's**: London coffee-houses, frequented by merchants and brokers.

212, 16. **Kit Cat.** See note to **130**, 24.

212, 17. **the October**: a Tory club.

213, 5. **Sir Gibby**: i.e., Sir Gilbert Heathcoat.

213, 18. Samuel **Garth**: (1661–1719) a physician who occasionally wrote poetry. His best known poem is the *Dispensary*. It was he who originated dispensaries.

215, 5. Frederick **Schiller**: (1759–1805) a celebrated German poet and dramatist, author of *Wallenstein*, *Wilhelm Tell*, etc.

215, 9. **Athalie or Saul.** The first is a play by Racine, the second by Alfieri.

215, 10–12. **Cinna** was considered Corneille's best play.

Pierre **Corneille** (1606–1684) is known as "the father of French tragedy." His chief plays are *Le Cid*, *Cinna*, *Médée*, and *Polyeucte*.

215, 13. Vittorio **Alfieri**: (1740–1803) an Italian dramatist whose chief tragedies, based on Greek models, are *Saul*, *Antigone*, *Philip II.*, *and Agamemnon*.

215, 14. **Racine.** See note to **131**, 10.

215, 23. **John Dennis**: (1657–1734) a poor poet and a sour critic.

217, 4. **Essay on Criticism.** See *Spectator*, No. 253.

217, 13. **extolled Pope's Miscellaneous pieces.** See *Spectator*, 523.

218, 5. **on Atticus.** This is Pope's attack on Addison in the Prologue to his *Satires.* **on Sporus**: i.e., on Lord Hervey, in the same Prologue.

220, 14. **the Englishman**: begun in January, 1714.

221, 7. **the first number of the new series**: June 18. See note to **209**, 15.

221, 18. **the death of Anne**: Aug. 1st, 1714.

222. 19. **Sir James Mackintosh**: (1765–1832) a celebrated Scotch philosopher, statesman, historian, and miscellaneous writer.

223, 13. **Lord John Russell**: (1792–1878) a prominent and influential English statesman, and an able supporter of free trade. He held office almost continually; was Prime Minister and Whig leader from 1846–52. **Sir Robert Peel**: (1788–1850) a prominent Tory statesman, and Prime Minister from 1834–35, and from 1841–46. Among his many important works may be mentioned the establishment of the police system. "Hence the slang expressions 'bobby' and 'peeler' for policemen." Henry Temple, Viscount **Palmerston**:

(1784–1865) a prominent Whig statesman, who was Prime Minister from 1855–58.

225, 17. **the Tale of a Tub**: (1704) a great religious satirical work by Jonathan Swift, which ridiculed in the persons of Peter, Luther, and Jack (John Calvin) the vices and corruptions of the Roman Catholics, Lutherans, and Calvinists. Had Swift not written this satire he would most likely have become a bishop.

226, 6. **an ecclesiastical dignity of no great value.** Swift rose no higher in the church than to be dean of St. Patrick's.

226, 15–18. "Then shun we, e'en amid the thickest fight,
Each other's lance; enough there are for me
Of Trojans and their brave allies to kill,
As heaven may aid me, and my speed on foot;
And Greeks enough there are for thee to slay,
If so indeed thou canst." *Iliad*, Bk. 6, ll. 228-229.
(Earl of Derby's translation.

229, 10. **Squire Western**: a jolly, sport-loving country gentleman in Fielding's *Tom Jones*. See note to **204**, 15.

229, 16. **the Town Talk**. This together with the *Crisis* and the *Reader* were short lived political periodical papers by Steele.

231, 10. **the Rosicrucian mythology**. The Rosicrucians were a sect of mystical philosophers supposed to have been founded in the 14th century in Germany by one named Rosenkrenz. In the 17th century they caused considerable discussion. They formed themselves into a secret society, believing that spirits of different kinds inhabited the air, earth, water, and fire, and endeavored to discover the true philosophy by means of mysticism.

232, 17. Mark **Akenside**: (1721–1770) a minor English poet and miscellaneous writer. His best work is *The Pleasures of Imagination*, a rather long and diffuse poem, the object of which was to show that the pleasures of imagination arise from the perception of beauty and greatness. Akenside recast the poem but died before completing it.

233, 6. Johann Gottfried von **Herder**: (1744–1803,) a celebrated German scholar, author, and theologian. Johann Wolfgang von **Goethe**: (1749–1832) the greatest poet of Germany, and a philosopher and scientist of importance. His greatest work is the tragedy of *Faust*. He wrote also *Werther*, *Wilhelm Meister*, *Egmont*, and *Iphigenia*, and many other works.

233, 8. David **Hume**: (1711–1776) a distinguished Scotch historian, philosopher, and miscellaneous writer. His best works are *History of England*, and a *Treatise on Human Nature*.

233, 8. **Robertson.** See note to **136**, 6.

235, 4. **thou art translated**: i.e., changed.

238, 11, 12. **the Satirist** and **the Age** were unimportant weekly papers of the year 1838.

238, 24. **the Duke of Chandos**: a distinguished noble of the earlier years of the 18th century. For Pope's lampoon see *Moral Essays*, Epistle IV. l. 99 *seq.*, where Canons means the seat of the Duke of Chandos. See also *Life of Pope* by Leslie Stephen.

239, 1. **Aaron Hill**: (1685–1750) a minor poet and historian, and also projector of impracticable schemes. See Pope's *Dunciad*, Bk. II. l. 295, *seq.*

241, 6. **brilliant and energetic lines.** Read Pope's *Epistle to Doctor Arbuthnot*, lines 194–214.

242, 10, 11. **Sir Peter Teazle . . . Mr. Joseph Surface**: characters in Sheridan's comedy *School for Scandal.* Surface is an artful and perfect hypocrite.

244, 1. **Chelsea**: a suburb of London.

244, 2. **Nell Gwynn**: one of the mistresses of Charles I. As a girl she was a wandering singer and mendicant and later an actress.

245, 6. **Lycidas**: the name under which Milton mourns the death of his friend Edward King, who was drowned in 1637 in St. George's Channel, on the Irish coast. The poem *Lycidas* is admitted to be the finest elegy in the English language.

245, 13. **a brother**: his second brother, Gulston.

245, 17. **William Somerville**: (1675–1742) a country gentleman, justice of the peace and a dabbler in poetry. He wrote *The Two Springs*, *The Chase*, *Rural Games*, *Field Sports*, etc.

247, 4. **Vincent Bourne.** See note to **136**, 14.

247, 9. James **Craggs**: (1686–1721) a young statesman who died early in life after making an immense fortune in the South Sea Bubble. He was a patron of letters.

247, 16. **Joseph Hume**: (1777–1855). In 1812 and in 1830 he was a member of parliament. He was an incorruptible and strict financier, and kept so constant and so keen an eye upon public expenditures that it became almost impossible for jobbers and place-hunters to secure unjust grants.

248, 18. **the Countess Dowager**: i.e., Charlotte, Countess of Warwick.

248, 20. **Rich** : the family name of the Earl of Holland, her first husband.

250, 8. **The celebrated bill**: i.e., the Peerage Bill, to restrict the crown in the creation of new peers.

250, 13. **Prime Minister**: i.e., the Earl of Sunderland.

251, 5, 6. **Swamping . . . the Upper House** was done by creating a sufficient number of new peers to change the vote in the House of Lords. The power to create peers lies in the sovereign, who can thus govern the Upper House.

252, 24. **by Johnson.** See his *Life of Addison.*

253, 7. **the Duenna**: a comic opera by Sheridan, 1775.

253, 8. **Newton.** See note to **9**, 8.

253, 15. **Henry Norris**: a celebrated English comedian who was known as "Jubilee Dicky" from having taken the part of Dicky, in a play called the *Trip to the Jubilee.*

255, 9. John **Gay**: (1685–1732) a poet and dramatist of some ability. He is best remembered as the author of *The Shepherd's Week*, the *Beggar's Opera* (1728) and his *Fables.*

257, 2. **son-in-law**: i.e., the Earl of Warwick.

257, 19. **Of the Psalms**: i.e., Psalm No. XXIII.

258, 5. **Jerusalem Chamber**, in Westminster Abbey, probably so called from the subjects of the tapestry with which the room was hung.

259, 3. William **Cowper**: (1731–1800) a distinguished poet. Besides the *Task*, *John Gilpin*, and some minor pieces, he is remembered as the author of the *Olney Hymns.*

259, 19. **defective.** The *Drummer*, the *Old Whig*, and the *Trial and Conviction of Count Tariff*, are omitted.

260, 5. **our own time**; i.e., 1809.

260, 10. **Everlasting Club**, etc. See *Spectator*, Nos. 72, 584, 585.

The Cambridge Literature Series

PRICES.

	Levantine
ADDISON, Sir Roger de Coverley Papers. Pages, 240	$0.25
BURKE, Speech on Conciliation. Pages, 184	.25
CARLYLE, Essay on Burns. Pages, 152	.25
COLERIDGE, The Ancient Mariner. Pages, 95.	.25
ELIOT, Silas Marner. *In preparation.*	
GOLDSMITH, The Vicar of Wakefield. *In preparation.*	
LONGFELLOW, Evangeline. Pages, 180	.25
LOWELL, Sir Launfal, and other Poems. Pages, 95.	.25
MACAULAY, Essays on Milton and Addison. Pages, 250	.25
MILTON, Minor Poems. Pages, 140	.25
POPE, Iliad, Books I., VI., XXII., and XXIV. Pages, 256	.25
SHAKSPERE, Macbeth. *In preparation.*	
SHAKSPERE, The Merchant of Venice. *In preparation.*	
SHAKSPERE, Julius Caesar. Pages, 270	.25
TENNYSON, The Princess. Pages, 210	.25

THE ABOVE PRICES ARE SUBJECT TO THE USUAL TRADE DISCOUNT.

BENJ. H. SANBORN & CO., . . . Publishers,

BOSTON. CHICAGO.

ies

Lemonline	
$0.25	
.25	
.25	
.25	
.25	
.25	
.25	
.25	
.25	
.25	
.25	
25	

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

14495.34.9
Essays on Milton and Addison /
Widener Library 003310571
3 2044 086 760 576